









Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from

The Institute of Museum and Library Services through an Indiana State Library LSTA Grant

Paradise Lost  
A POEM  
IN  
Twelve Books.  
BY  
JOHN MILTON



Designed by J.C. Hamilton, R.A.

Engraved by D. Massey.

I deny  
From wonder that ye should that walk the hill,  
One of the heavenly host. ———— D.H.

BOSTON,  
Published by Timothy Baskinshaw,  
47 Corn-Hill.

1820.

# PARADISE LOST,

A POEM,

IN

TWELVE BOOKS,

---

BY JOHN MILTON.

---

BOSTON :

PUBLISHED BY TIMOTHY BEDLINGTON.

1820.

.....

Sylvester T. Goss, printer.

1894

...

...

...

mg 5382

THE  
LIFE OF JOHN MILTON.

---

FROM a family and town of his name in Oxfordshire, our Author derived his descent; but he was born at London, in the year 1608. His father John Milton, by profession a scrivener, lived in a reputable manner on a competent estate, entirely his own acquisition, having been early disinherited by his parents for renouncing the communion of the church of Rome, to which they were zealously devoted.

Our Author was the favourite of his father's hopes, who, to cultivate the great genius which early displayed itself, was at the expence of a domestic tutor, whose care and capacity his pupil hath gratefully celebrated in an excellent Latin elegy. At his initiation he is said to have applied himself to letters with such indefatigable industry, that he rarely was prevailed upon to quit his studies before midnight: which not only made him frequently subject to severe pains in his head; but likewise occasioned that weakness in his eyes, which terminated in a total privation of sight. From a domestic education he was removed to St. Paul's School, to complete his acquaintance with the classics, under the care of Dr. Gill; and after a short stay there was transplanted to Christ's College in Cambridge, where he distinguished himself in all kinds of academical exercises. Of this society he continued a member till he commenced Master of Arts; and then leaving the university, he returned to his father, who had quitted the town, and lived at Horton in Buckinghamshire, where he pursued his studies with unparalleled assiduity and success.

After some years spent in this studious retirement his mother died, and then he prevailed with his father to gratify an inclination he had long entertained of seeing foreign countries. Sir Henry Wotton, at that time pro-

most of Eton College, gave him a letter of advice for the direction of his travels. Having employed his curiosity about two years in France and Italy, on the news of a civil war breaking out in England, he returned, without taking a survey of Greece and Sicily, as at his sitting out the scheme was projected. At Paris the Lord Viscount Scudermore, ambassador from King Charles I. at the court of France, introduced him to the acquaintance of Grotius, who at that time was honoured with the same character there by Christiana, Queen of Sweden. In Rome, Genoa, Florence, and other cities of Italy, he contracted a familiarity with those who were of highest reputation for wit and learning, several of whom gave him very obliging testimonies of their friendship and esteem.

Returning from his travels he found England on the point of being involved in blood and confusion. He retired to lodgings provided for him in the city; which being commodious for the reception of his sister's sons, and some other young gentlemen, he undertook their education.

In this philosophical course he continued, without a wife, till the year 1643; when he married Mary, the daughter of Richard Powel, of Foresthill, in Oxfordshire, a gentleman of estate and reputation in that county, and of principles so very opposite to his son-in-law, that the marriage is more to be wondered at than the separation which ensued, in little more than a month after she had cohabited with him in London. Her desertion provoked him both to write several treatises concerning the doctrine and discipline of divorces, and also to pay his addresses to a young lady of great wit and beauty; but, before he had engaged her affections to conclude the marriage treaty, in a visit at one of his relations, he found his wife prostrate before him, imploring forgiveness and reconciliation. It is not to be doubted but an interview of that nature, so little expected, must wonderfully affect him; and perhaps the impressions it made on his imagination, contributed much to the painting of that pa-

thetic scene in *Paradise Lost*,\* in which Eve addresseth herself to Adam for pardon and peace. At the intercession of his friends, who were present, after a short reluctance, he generously sacrificed all his resentment to her tears:

—————Soon his heart relented  
Tow'ards her, his life so late and sole delight,  
Now at his feet submissive in distress.

And after this re-union, so far was he from retaining any unkind memory of the provocations which he had received from her ill conduct, that when the king's cause was entirely suppressed, and her father had been active in his loyalty, was exposed to sequestration, *Milton* received both him and his family to protection, and free entertainment, in his own house, till their affairs were accommodated by his interest in the victorious faction.

A commission to constitute him Adjutant General to Sir William Waller was promised, but soon superseded, by Waller's being laid aside, when his masters thought it proper to new-model their army. However, the keenness of his pen had so effectually recommended him to Cromwell's esteem, that when he took the reins of government into his own hand, he advanced him to be Latin Secretary, both to himself and the Parliament; the former of these preferments he enjoyed both under the usurper and his son, the other until King Charles II. was restored. For some time he had an apartment for his family at Whitehall: but his health requiring a freer accession to air, he was obliged to remove from thence to lodgings which opened into St. James's Park. Not long after his settlement there his wife died in child-bed, and much about the time of her death, a gotta serena, which had for several years been gradually increasing, totally extinguished his sight. In this melancholy condition, he was easily prevailed with to think of taking another wife, who was Catharine, the daughter of Captain Woodcock, of

---

\* Book X.

Hackney; and she too, in less than a year after their marriage, died in the same unfortunate manner as the former had done; and in his twenty-third sonnet he does honour to her memory.

Being a second time a widow, he employed his friend Dr. Paget to make choice of a third consort, on whose recommendation he married Elizabeth, the daughter of Mr. Minshul, a Cheshire gentleman, by whom he had no issue. Three daughters, by his first wife, were then living; the two elder of whom are said to have been very serviceable to him in his studies: for having been instructed to pronounce not only the modern, but also the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew languages, they read in their respective originals, whatever authors he wanted to consult, though they understood none but their mother-tongue.

We come now to take a survey of him in that point of view, in which he will be looked upon by all succeeding ages with equal delight and admiration. An interval of about twenty years had elapsed since he wrote the mask of *Comus*, *L'Allegro*, *Il Penseroso*, and *Lycidas*, all in such an exquisite strain, that though he had left no other monuments of his genius behind him, his name had been immortal; but neither the infirmities of age and constitution, nor the vicissitudes of fortune, could depress the vigour of his mind, or divert it from executing a design he had long conceived of writing an heroic poem.\* The fall of man was a subject that he had some years before fixed on for a tragedy, which he intended to form by the models of antiquity; and some, not without probability, say, the play opened with that speech in the fourth book of *Paradise Lost*, l. 32, which is addressed by Satan to the sun. Were it material, I believe I could produce other passages, which more plainly appear to have been originally intended for the scene: but, whatever truth there may be in this report, it is certain that he did not begin to mould his subject, in the form which it bears now, before he had concluded his controversy with *Salmasius*,

---

\* *Paradise Lost*, IX. line 26.

and More, when he had wholly lost the use of his eyes, and was forced to employ, in the office of an amanuensis, any friend who accidentally paid him a visit. Yet, under all these discouragements, and various interruptions, in the year 1669 he published his *Paradise Lost*, the noblest poem (next to those of Homer and Virgil) that ever the wit of man produced in any age or nation. Need I mention any other evidence of its inestimable worth, than that the finest geniuses who have succeeded him, have ever esteemed it a merit to relish and illustrate its beauties?

And now perhaps it may pass for a fiction, what with great veracity I affirm to be fact, that *Milton*, after having with much difficulty prevailed to have this divine poem licensed for the press, could sell the copy for no more than fifteen pounds; the payment of which valuable consideration depended upon the sale of three numerous impressions. So unreasonable may personal prejudice affect the most excellent performances!

About two years after, he published *Paradise Regain'd*; but, *Oh! what a falling off was there!*—of which I will say no more, than that there is scarcely a more remarkable instance of the frailty of human reason than our author gave, in preferring this poem to *Paradise Lost*.

And thus having attended him to the sixty-sixth year of his age, as closely as such imperfect lights as men of letters and retirement usually leave to guide our enquiry would allow, it now only remains to be recorded, that, in the year 1674, the gout put a period to his life, at Bunhill, near London; from whence his body was conveyed to St. Gile's church, by Cripplegate, where it lies interred in the chancel; and a neat monument has lately been erected to perpetuate his memory.

In his youth he is said to have been extremely handsome; the colour of his hair was a light brown, the symmetry of his features exact, enlivened with an agreeable air, and a beautiful mixture of fair and ruddy. His stature (as we find it measured by himself) did not exceed

the middle-size neither too lean nor corpulent; his limbs well proportioned, nervous, and active, serviceable in all respects to his exercising the sword, in which he much delighted; and wanted neither skill nor courage to resent an affront from men of the most athletic constitutions. In his diet he was abstemious; not delicate in the choice of his dishes; and strong liquors of all kinds were his aversion. His deportment was erect, open, affable; his conversation easy, cheerful, instructive; his wit on all occasions at command, facetious, grave, or satirical, as the subject required. His judgment, when disengaged from religious and political speculations, was just and penetrating, his apprehension quick, his memory tenacious of what he read, his reading only not so extensive as his genius, for that was universal. And having treasured up such immense store of science, perhaps the faculties of his soul grew more vigorous after he was deprived of sight; and his imagination (naturally sublime and enlarged by reading romances, of which he was much enamoured in his youth,) when it was wholly abstracted from material objects, was more at liberty to make such amazing excursions into the ideal world, when in composing his divine work he was tempted to range

Beyond the visible diurnal sphere.

With so many accomplishments, not to have had some faults and misfortunes to be laid in the balance with the fame and felicity of writing *Paradise Lost*, would have been too great a portion for humanity.

ELIJAH FENTON.

ON  
PARADISE LOST.

---

---

WHEN I beheld the Poet blind, yet bold,  
In slender book his vast design unfold ;  
Messiah crown'd, God's reconcil'd decree,  
Rebelling Angels, the forbidden tree,  
Heav'n, Hell, Earth, Chaos, All ! the argument  
Held me awhile misdoubting his intent ;  
That he would ruin (for I saw him strong)  
The sacred truths to fable, and old song ;  
(So Samson grop'd the temple's post in spite)  
The world o'erwhelming to revenge his sight.

Yet, as I read, soon growing less severe,  
I lik'd his project, the success did fear ;  
'Through that wide field how he his way should find,  
O'er which lame faith leads understanding blind,  
Lest he perplex'd the things he would explain,  
And what was easy he should render vain.

Or, if a work so infinite be spann'd,  
Jealous, I was that some less skilful hand  
(Such as disquiet always what is well,  
And by ill imitating would excel)  
Might hence presume the whole creation's day  
To change in scenes, and shew it in a play.

Pardon me, mighty Poet, nor dispise  
My causeless, yet not impious surmise.  
But I am now convinc'd, and none will dare  
Within thy labours to pretend a share.  
Thou hast not miss'd one thought that could be fit,  
And all that was improper dost omit :  
So that no room is here for writers left,  
But to detect their ignorance, or theft.

That majesty which through thy work doth reign,  
 Draws the devout, deterring the profane:  
 And things divine thou treat'st of in such state,  
 As them preserves, and the inviolate.  
 At once delight and horror on us seize,  
 Thou sing'st with so much gravity and ease;  
 And above human flight dost soar aloft,  
 With plume so strong, so equal, and so soft:  
 The bird nam'd from that Paradise you sing  
 So never flags, but always keeps on wing.

Where couldst thou words of such a compass find?  
 Whence furnish such a vast expanse of mind?  
 Just Heav'n thee, like Tiresias, to requite,  
 Rewards with prophecy thy loss of sight.

Well might'st thou scorn thy readers to allure  
 With tinkling rhyme of thy own sense secure;  
 While the Town-bays writes all the while and spells,  
 And, like a pack-horse, tires without his bells:  
 Their fancies like our bushy points appear,  
 'The poets tag them, we for fashion wear.  
 I too transported by the mode commend,  
 And while I mean to praise thee must offend.  
 Thy verse created like thy theme sublime,  
 In number, weight, and measure, needs not rhyme,  
ANDREW MARVELL.

---

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK I.

---

## ARGUMENT.

The first book proposes first (in brief) the whole subject, Man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was placed; then touches the prime cause of his fall—the Serpent, or rather Satan in the serpent; who, revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of Angels, was, by the command of God, driven out of Heaven, with all his crew, into the great deep. Which action passed over, the poem hastes into the midst of things; presenting Satan with his Angels now fallen into hell, described here not in the centre (for Heaven and Earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed,) but in a place of utter darkness, fittest called Chaos: Here Satan, with his Angels lying on the burning lake thunder-struck and astonished, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who next in order and dignity lay by him; they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded; they rise, their numbers, array of battle, their chief leaders named, according the idols known afterwards in Canaan, that the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech; comforts them with hope yet of regaining Heaven! but tells them, lastly, of a new world and new kind of creature to be created, according to an ancient prophecy or a report in Heaven; (for that Angels were long before this visible creation was the opinion of many ancient Fathers.) To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep; the infernal peers there sit in council.

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK I.

OF Man's first disobedience, and the fruit  
Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste  
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,  
With loss of Eden, till one greater Man  
Restore us, and regain the blissful seat, 5  
Sing, heav'nly Muse, that on the secret top  
Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire  
That shepherd, who first taught the chosen seed,  
In the beginning how the Heav'ns and Earth  
Rose out of Chaos! Or, if Sion hill 10  
Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook, that flow'd  
Fast by the oracle of God; I thence  
Invoke thy aid to my advent'rous song,  
That with no middle flight intends to soar  
Above th' Aonian mount, while it pursues 15  
Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.  
And chiefly Thou, O Spi'rit, that does prefer  
Before all temples th' upright heart and pure,  
Instruct me, for Thou know'st; Thou from the first  
Wast present, and, with mighty wings outspread, 20  
Dove like, sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,  
And mad'st it pregnant. What in me is dark,  
Illumine; what is low, raise and support;  
'That to the height of this great argument,

I may assert eternal Providence, 25  
 And justify the ways of God to men.  
 Say first; for Heav'n hides nothing from thy view,  
 Nor the deep tract of Hell; say first what cause  
 Mov'd our grand parents, in that happy state,  
 Favour'd of Heav'n so highly, to fall off 30  
 From their Creator, and transgress his will  
 For one restraint, lords of the world besides?  
 Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt?  
 Th' infernal Serpent; he it was, whose guile,  
 Stir'd up with envy and revenge deceiv'd 35  
 The mother of mankind, what time his pride  
 Had cast him out from Heav'n with all his host  
 Of rebel Angels, by whose aid, aspiring  
 To set himself in glory' above his peers,  
 He trusted to have equall'd the Most High, 40  
 If he oppos'd; and, with ambitious aim  
 Against the throne and monarchy of God,  
 Rais'd impious war in Heav'n, and battle proud,  
 With vain attempt. Him th' Almighty Power  
 Hurl'd headlong flaming from the ethereal sky, 45  
 With hideous ruin and combustion, down  
 To bottomless perdition, there to dwell  
 In adamantin chains and penal fire,  
 Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms.  
 Nine times the space that measures day and night 50  
 To mortal men, he with his horrid crew  
 Lay vanquish'd, rolling in the fiery gulph,  
 Confounded, though immortal: but his doom  
 Reserv'd him to more wrath; for now the thought  
 Both of lost happiness and lasting pain 55  
 Torments him; round he throws his baleful eyes,  
 That witness'd huge affliction and dismay,  
 Mix'd with obdurate pride and steadfast hate:  
 At once, as far as Angels ken, he views  
 The dismal situation waste and wild; 60  
 A dungeon horrible on all sides round  
 As one great furnace flam'd; yet from those flames  
 No light, but rather darkness visible

Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,  
 Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace 65  
 And rest can never dwell, hope never comes  
 That comes to all, but torture without end  
 Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed  
 With ever-burning sulphur unconsum'd.  
 Such place eternal Justice had prepar'd 70  
 For those rebellious ; here their pris'on ordain'd  
 In utter darkness ; and their portion set  
 As far remov'd from God and light of Heav'n,  
 As from the centre thrice to th' utmost pole.  
 O how unlike the place from whence they fell ! 75  
 There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd  
 With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,  
 He soon discerns, and, wett'ring by his side,  
 One next himself in pow'r and next in crime,  
 Long after known in Palestine, and nam'd 80  
 Beëlzebub. To whom th' Arch Enemy,  
 And thence in Heav'n call'd Satan, with bold words  
 Breaking the horrid silence, thus began.  
 " If thou beest he ; but O how fallen ! how chang'd  
 From him, who in the happy realms of light, 85  
 Cloth'd with transcendant brightness, didst outshine  
 Myriads, though bright ! If he whom mutual league,  
 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope  
 And hazard in the glorious enterprize,  
 Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd 90  
 In equal ruin ; into what pit thou seest,  
 From what height fall'n ; so much the stronger prov'd  
 He with his thunder : and till then who knew  
 The force of those dire arms ? Yet not for those,  
 Nor what the potent Victor in his rage, 95  
 Can else inflict, do I repent, or change  
 (Though chang'd in outward lustre) that fix'd mind,  
 And high disdain from sense of injur'd merit,  
 That with the Mightiest rais'd me to contend,  
 And to the fierce contention brought along 100  
 Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd.  
 That durst dislike his reign, and me preferring,

His utmost pow'r with adverse pow'r oppos'd  
 In dubious battle on the plains of Heav'n,  
 And shook his throne. What tho' the field be lost ?  
 All is not lost ; th' unconquerable will, 106  
 And study of revenge, immortal hate,  
 And courage never to submit or yield,  
 And what is else not to be overcome ;  
 That glory never shall his wrath or might 110  
 Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace  
 With suppliant knee, and deify his pow'r,  
 Who from the terror of this arm so late  
 Doubted his empire ; that were low indeed !  
 That were an ignominy' and shame beneath 115  
 This downfall ! since by fate the strength of Gods  
 And this empyreal substance cannot fail,  
 Since, through experience of this great event,  
 In arms not worse, in foresight much advanc'd,  
 We may with more successful hope resolve 120  
 To wage, by force or guile, eternal war ;  
 Irreconcilable to our great foe,  
 Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy,  
 Sole reigning, holds the tyranny of Heav'n."

So spake th' apostate Angel, though in pain, 125  
 Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair ;  
 And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.

" O Prince, O Chief of many throned powers ;  
 That led th' embattled Seraphim to war  
 Under thy conduct, and, in dreadful deeds 130  
 Fearless, endanger'd Heav'n's perpetual King,  
 And put to proof his high supremacy ;  
 Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate ;  
 Too well I see and rue the dire event,  
 That with sad overthrow and foul defeat 135  
 Hath lost us Heav'n, and all this mighty host  
 In horrible destruction laid thus low,  
 As far as Gods and heavn'ly essences  
 Can perish : for the mind and spi'rit remains  
 Invincible, and vigour soon returns, 140  
 Though all our glory' extinct and happy state

Here swallow'd up in endless misery.  
 But what if he our Conqu'ror (whom I now  
 Of force believe almighty, since no less  
 Than such could have o'erpow'r'd such force as ours)  
 Have left us this our spi'rit and strength entire, 146  
 Strongly to suffer and support our pains,  
 That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,  
 Or do him mightier service as his thralls  
 By right of war; whate'er his business be, 150  
 Here in the heart of Hell to work in fire,  
 Or do his errands in the gloomy deep:  
 What can it then avail, though yet we feel  
 Strength undiminish'd, or eternal being,  
 To undergo eternal punishment? 155  
 Whereto with speedy words th' Arch Fiend reply'd.  
 " Fall'n Cherub, to be weak is miserable,  
 Doing or suffering: but of this be sure,  
 To do ought good never will be our task,  
 But ever to do ill our sole delight: 160  
 As be'ing the contrary to his high will  
 Whom we resist. If then his providence  
 Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,  
 Our labour must be to pervert that end,  
 And out of good still to find means of evil; 165  
 Which oft-times may succeed, so as perhaps  
 Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb  
 His inmost counsels from their destin'd aim.  
 But see, the angry Victor hath recall'd  
 His ministers of vengeance and pursuit 170  
 Back to the gates of Heaven: the sulphurous hail,  
 Shot after us in storm, o'erblown, hath laid  
 The fiery surge that from the precipice  
 Of Heav'n receiv'd us falling; and the thunder,  
 Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage, 175  
 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now  
 To bellow through the vast and boundless deep.  
 Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn  
 Or satiate fury yield it from our foe.  
 Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild, 180

The seat of desolation, void of light,  
 Save what the glimmering of these livid flames  
 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend  
 From off the tossing of these fiery waves ;  
 There rest, if any rest can harbour there ; 185  
 And, re-assemble our afflicted Powers,  
 Consult how we may henceforth most offend  
 Our enemy, our own loss how repair ;  
 How overcome this dire calamity ;  
 What reinforcement we may gain from hope ; 190  
 If not, what resolution from despair."

Thus Satan, talking to his nearest mate  
 With head uplifted above the wave, and eyes  
 That sparkling blaz'd ; his other parts besides  
 Prone on the flood, extending long and large, 195  
 Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge  
 As whom the fables name as monstrous size,  
 Titanian, or Earth-born, that warr'd on Jove ;  
 Briareos, or Typhen, whom the den  
 By ancient Tarsus held ; or that sea-beast 200  
 Leviathan, which God of all his works  
 Created hugest that swim th' ocean stream :  
 Him haply slumb'ring on the Norway foam,  
 The pilot of some small night-founder'd skiff  
 Deeming some island, oft, as seamen tell, 205  
 With fixed anchor in his scaly rind,  
 Moors by his side under the lee, while night  
 Invests the sea, and wished morn delays :  
 So stretch'd out huge in length the Arch Fiend lay,  
 Chain'd on the burning lake ; nor ever thence 210  
 Had ris'n, or heav'd his head, but that the will  
 And high permission of all-ruling Heaven,  
 Left him at large to his own dark designs,  
 That with reiterated crimes he might  
 Heap on himself damnation, while he sought 215  
 Evil to others : and, enrag'd, might see  
 How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth  
 Infinite goodness, grace and mercy shown  
 On Man, by him seduc'd ; but on himself

Treble confusion, wrath, and vengeance, pour'd. 220  
 Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool  
 His mighty stature ; on each hand the flames,  
 Driv'n backward, slope their pointing spires, and, roll'd  
 In billows, leave i' th' midst a horrid vale.  
 Then with expanded wings he steers his flight 225  
 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air,  
 That felt unusual weight ; till on dry land  
 He lights, if it were land that ever burn'd  
 With solid, as the lake with liquid fire ;  
 And such appear'd in hue as when the force 230  
 Of subterranean wind transports a hill  
 Torn from Pelorus, or the shatter'd side  
 Of thund'ring Ætna, whose combustible  
 And fuell'd entrails, thence conceiving fire,  
 Sublim'd with mineral fury, aid the winds, 235  
 And leave a singed bottom all involv'd  
 With stench and smoke ; such resting found the sole  
 Of unblest feet. Him follow'd his next mate,  
 Both glorying to have 'scap'd the Stygian flood  
 As gods, and by their own recover'd strength, 240  
 Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.  
 " In this the region, this the soil, the clime,"  
 Said then the lost Archangel, " this the seat  
 That we must change for Heav'n, this mournful gloom  
 For that celestial light? Be' it so, since he 245  
 Who now is Sov'reign can dispose and bid  
 What shall be right : farthest from him is best,  
 Whom reason hath equall'd, force hath made supreme  
 Above his equals. Farewell, happy fields,  
 Where joy for ever dwells ! Hail, horrors ; hail, 250  
 Infernal world ! and thou, profoundest Hell,  
 Receive thy new possessor ; one who brings  
 A mind not to be chang'd by place or time.  
 The mind is its own place, and in itself  
 Can make a Heav'n of Hell, a Hell of Heav'n. 255  
 What matter where, if I be still the same,  
 And what I should be, all but less than he  
 Whom thunder hath made greater ? Here at least

We shall be free ; th' Almighty hath not built  
 Here for his envy ; will not drive us hence : 260  
 Here we may reign secure ; and in my choice  
 To reign is worth ambition, though in Hell :  
 Better to reign in Hell than serve in Heaven !  
 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,  
 Th' associates and copartners of our loss, 265  
 Lie thus astonish'd on th' oblivious pool,  
 And call them not to share with us their part  
 In this unhappy mansion, or once more  
 With rallied arms to try what may be yet  
 Regain'd in Heav'n, or what more lost in Hell ?" 270  
 So Satan spake, and him Beëlzebub  
 Thus answer'd. " Leader of those armies bright,  
 Which but th' Omnipotent none could have foil'd,  
 If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge  
 Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft 275  
 In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge  
 Of battle when it rag'd, in all assaults  
 Their surest signal, they will soon resume  
 New courage, and revive, though now they lie  
 Groveling and prostrate on yon lake of fire, 280  
 As we erewhile, astounded and amaz'd,  
 No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious height."  
 He scarce had ceas'd when the superior Fiend  
 Was moving tow'ard the shore ! his pond'rous shield,  
 Etherial temper, massy, large, and round, 285  
 Behind him cast ; the broad circumference  
 Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb  
 Through optic glass the Tuscan artist views  
 At evening from the top of Fesolê,  
 Or in Valdarno, to descry new lands, 290  
 Rivers, or mountains, on her spotty globe.  
 His spear (to equal which the tallest pine  
 Hewn on Norwegian hills, to be the mast  
 Of some great amiral, were but a wand)  
 He walk'd with, to support uneasy steps 295  
 Over the burning marl ; not like those steps  
 On Heav'n's azure ; and the torrid clime

Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with fire :  
 Nathless he so endur'd, till on the beach  
 Of that inflamed sea he stood, and call'd 300  
 His legions, Angel-forms, who lay entranc'd  
 Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks  
 In Vallombrosa, where th' Etrurian shades  
 High over-arch'd imbow'r ; or scatter'd sedge  
 Afloat, when with fierce winds Orion arm'd 305  
 Hath vex'd the Red-Sea coast, whose waves o'erthrew  
 Busiris and his Memphian chivalry,  
 While with perfidious hatred they pursued  
 The sojourners of Goshen, who beheld  
 From the safe shore their floating carcasses 310  
 And broken chariot-wheels : so thick hestrown,  
 Abject and lost, lay these, covering the flood,  
 Under amazement of their hideous change.  
 He call'd so loud, that all the hollow deep  
 Of Hell resounded. " Princes, Potentates, 315  
 Warriors, the flow'r of Heaven, once yours, now lost,  
 If such astonishment as this can seize  
 Eternal Spi'rits ; or have ye chos'n this place  
 After the toil of battle to repose  
 Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find 320  
 To slumber here, as in the vales of Heav'n ?  
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn  
 To' adore the Conqueror ? who now beholds  
 Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood  
 With scatter'd arms and ensigns, till anon 325  
 His swift pursuers from Heav'n gates discern  
 Th' advantage, and, descending, tread us down,  
 Thus drooping ; or with linked thunder-bolts  
 Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf.  
 Awake, arise, or be forever fall'n !" 330

They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung  
 Upon the wing, as when men wont to watch  
 On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,  
 Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.  
 Nor did they not perceive the evil plight 335  
 In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel ;

Yet to their general's voice they soon obey'd  
 Innumerable. As when the potent rod  
 Of Amram's son, in Egypt's evil day,  
 Wav'd round the coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud  
 Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind, 341  
 That o'er the realm of impious Pharoah hung,  
 Like night, and darken'd all the land of Nile :  
 So numberless were those bad Angels seen,  
 Hovering on wing under the cope of Hell, 345  
 Twixt upper, neither, and surrounding fires ;  
 Till as the signal giv'n, th' up-lifted spear  
 Of their great Sultan waving to direct  
 Their course, in even balance down they light  
 On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain ; 350  
 A multitude, like which the populous north  
 Pour'd never from her frozen loins, to pass  
 Rhene or the Danaw, when her barbarous sons  
 Came like a deluge on the south, and spread  
 Beneath Gibraltar to the Libyan sands. 355  
 Forthwith from every squadron and each band  
 'The heads and leaders thither haste where stood  
 Their great commander: Godlike shapes and forms  
 Excelling human, princely Dignities,  
 And Pow'rs that erst in Heaven sat on thrones ; 360  
 Though of their names in Heav'nly records now  
 Be no memorial, blotted out and rais'd  
 By their rebellion from the books of life.  
 Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve 364  
 Got them new names, till, wand'ring o'er the earth,  
 Through God's high sufferance for the tri'al of man,  
 By falsities and lies the greatest part  
 Of mankind they corrupted to forsake  
 God their Creator, and the invisible  
 Glory of him that made them to transform 370  
 Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd  
 With gay religions, full of pomp and gold,  
 And Devils to adore for deities :  
 Then were they known to men by various names,  
 And various idols through the Heathen world. 375  
 Say, Muse, their names then known, who first, who last,

Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery couch,  
 At their great empe'ror's call, as next in worth  
 Came singly where he stood on the bare strand  
 While the promiscuous crowd stood yet aloof. 380  
 The chief were those who, from the pit of Hell  
 Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix  
 Their seats long after next the seat of God,  
 Their altars by his altar ; God's ador'd  
 Among the nations round ; and durst abide 385  
 Jehovah thund'ring out of Sion, thron'd  
 Between the Cherubim ; yea, often plac'd  
 Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,  
 Abominations ; and with cursed things  
 His holy rites and solemn feasts profan'd, 390  
 And with their darkness durst affront his light.  
 First Moloch, horrid king, besmear'd with blood  
 Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears ;  
 Though for the noise of drums and timbrels loud  
 Their children's cries unheard, that pass'd thro' fire  
 To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite 396  
 Worship'd in Rabba and her wat'ry plain,  
 In Argob and in Basan, to the stream  
 Of utmost Arnon. Nor content with such  
 Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart 400  
 Of Solomon he led by fraud to build  
 His temple right against the temple' of God,  
 On that opprobrious hill, and made his grove  
 The pleasant valley' of Hinnom, Tophet thence  
 And black Gehenna call'd, the type of Hell. 405  
 Next Chemos, th' obscene dread of Moab's sons,  
 From Aroar to Nebo, and the wild  
 Of southmost Abarim ; in Hesebon  
 And Horonaim, Seon's realm beyond  
 The flow'ry dale of Sibima clad with vines, 410  
 And Elealé to th' Asphaltic pool.  
 Peor his other name, when he entic'd  
 Israel in Sittim on their march from Nile  
 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.  
 Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarg'd 415

Ev'n to that hill of scandal, by the grove  
 Of Mo'och homicide, lust hard by hate ;  
 Till good Josiah drove them thence to Hell.  
 With these came they, who, from the bord'ring flood  
 Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts ✓ 420  
 Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names  
 Of Baälim and Ashtaroth ; those male,  
 These feminine. For Spirits when they please  
 Can either sex assume, or both ; so soft  
 And uncompounded is their essence pure, 425  
 Not ty'd or manacled with joint or limb,  
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,  
 Like cumbrous flesh ; but in what shape they choose,  
 Dilated or condens'd, bright or obscure,  
 Can execute their airy purposes, 430  
 And works of love or enmity fulfil.  
 For those the race of Israel oft forsook  
 Their living strength, and unfrequented left  
 His righteous altar, bowing lowly down  
 To bestial Gods ; for which their heads as low 435  
 Bow'd down in battle, sunk before the spear  
 Of despicable foes. With these in troop  
 Came Astoreth, whom the Phoenicians call'd  
 Astarte, queen of Heav'n, with crescent horns ;  
 To whose bright image nightly by the moon 440  
 Sidonian virgins paid their vows and songs,  
 In Sion also not unsung, where stood  
 Her temple on th' offensive mountain, built  
 By that uxorious king, whose heart though large,  
 Beguil'd by fair idolatresses, fell 445  
 To idols foul. Thammuz came next behind,  
 Whose annual wound in Lebanon allur'd  
 The Syrian damsels to lament his fate  
 In amorous ditties all a summer's day,  
 While smooth Adonis from his native rock 450  
 Ran purple to the sea, suppos'd with blood  
 Of Thammuz yearly wounded : the love-tale  
 Infected Sion's daughters with like heat,  
 Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch

Ezekiel saw, when, by the vision led, 455  
 His eye survey'd the dark idolatries  
 Of alienated Judah. Next came one  
 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the captive ark  
 Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lopt off  
 In his own temple, on the grunsel edge, 460  
 Where he fell flat, and sham'd his worshippers ;  
 Dagon his name, sea-monster, upward man  
 And downward fish : yet had his temple high  
 Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the coast  
 Of Palestine, in Gath and Ascalon, 465  
 And Accaron and Gaza's frontier bounds.  
 Him follow'd Rimmon, whose delightful seat  
 Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks  
 Of Abbana and Pharphar, lucid streams.  
 He also' against the house of God was hold : 470  
 A leper once he lost, and gain'd a king,  
 Abaz, his sottish conqu'ror, whom he drew  
 God's altar to disparage and displace.  
 For one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn  
 His odious offerings, and adore the Gods 475  
 Whom he had vanquish'd. After these appear'd  
 A crew, who, under names of old renown,  
 Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train,  
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd  
 Fanatic Egypt and her priests, to seek 480  
 Their wand'ring Gods, disguis'd in brutish forms  
 Rather than human. Nor did Israel 'scape  
 Th' infection, when their borrow'd gold compos'd  
 The calf in Oreb ; and the rebel king  
 Doubled that sin in Bethel and in Dan, 485  
 Likening his Maker to the grazed ox,  
 Jehovah, who in one night, when he pass'd  
 From Egypt marching, equall'd with one stroke  
 Both her first born and all her bleating Gods.  
 Belial came last, than whom a Spirit more lewd 490  
 Fell not from Heav'n or more gross to love  
 Vice for itself : to him no temple stood,  
 Or alter smok'd ; yet who more oft than he

In temples and at altars when the priest  
 Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who fill'd 495  
 With lust and violence the house of God?  
 In courts and palaces he also reigns,  
 And in luxurious cities, where the noise  
 Of riot ascends above their loftiest towers,  
 And injury and outrage : and, when night 500  
 Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons  
 Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.  
 Witness the streets of Sodom, and that night  
 In Gibeah, when the hospitable door  
 Expos'd a matron to avoid worse rape. 505  
 These were the prime in order and in might ;  
 The rest were long to tell, though far renown'd ;  
 Th' Ionian Gods, of Javan's issue held  
 Gods, yet confess'd later than Heav'n and Earth,  
 Their boasted parents Titan, Heav'n's first-born,  
 With his enormous brood, and birthright seiz'd  
 By younger Saturn ; he from mightier Jove  
 His own and Rhea's son like measure found ;  
 So Jove usurping reign'd : these first in Crete  
 And Ida known, thence on the snowy top 515  
 Of cold Olympus rul'd the middle air,  
 Their highest Heav'n ; or on the Delphian cliff,  
 Or in Dodona, and through all the bounds  
 Of Doric land ; or who with Saturn old  
 Fled over Adria, to th' Hesperian fields, 520  
 And o'er the Celtic roam'd the utmost isles.  
 All these and more came flocking ; but with looks  
 Down cast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd  
 Obscure some glimpse of joy, to' have found their chief  
 Not in despair, to' have found themselves not lost  
 In loss itself ; which on his count'nance cast 526  
 Like doubtful hue : but he his wonted pride  
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore  
 Semblance of worth, not substance, gently rais'd  
 Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears. 530  
 Then straight commands that, at the warlike sounds  
 Of trumpets loud and clarions, be uprear'd

His mighty standard : that proud honour claim'd,  
 Azazel as his right, a Cherub tall ;  
 Who forthwith from the glitt'ring staff unfurl'd  
 Th' imperial ensign, which, full high advanc'd, 355  
 Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind,  
 With gems and golden lustre rich emblaz'd  
 Seraphic arms and trophies ; all the while  
 Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds ;  
 At which the universal host up sent 540  
 A shout that tore Hell's concave, and beyond  
 Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.  
 All in a moment through the gloom were seen  
 Ten thousand banners rise into the air,  
 With orient colours waving ; with them rose 545  
 A forest huge of spears ; and thronging helms  
 Appear'd, and serried shields in thick array,  
 Of depth immeasurable : anon they move  
 In perfect phalanx to the Dorian mood  
 Of flutes and soft recorders ; such as rais'd 550  
 To height of noblest temper heroes old  
 Arming to battle, and instead of rage,  
 Deliberate valour breath'd, firm, and unmov'd  
 With dread of death, to flight or foul retreat ;  
 Nor wanting pow'r to mitigate and swage, 555  
 With solemn touches, troubled thoughts, and chase  
 Anguish, and doubt, and fear, and sorrow, and pain,  
 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they,  
 Breathing united force with fixed thought  
 Mov'd on in silence to soft pipes, that charm'd 560  
 Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil ; and now,  
 Advanc'd in view, they stand, a horrid front  
 Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise  
 Of warriors old with order'd spear and shield,  
 Awaiting what command their mighty chief 565  
 Had to impose : He through the armed files  
 Darts his experienc'd eye, and soon traverse  
 The whole battalion views, their order due,  
 Their visages and statures as of Gods ;  
 Their number last he sums. And now his heart 570

Distends with pride, and, hard'ning, in his strength  
 Glories : for never since created man  
 Met such embodied force as, nam'd with these,  
 Could merit more than that small infantry  
 Warr'd on by cranes ; tho' all the giant brood 575  
 Of Phlegra with the heroic race were join'd,  
 That fought at Thebes and Ilium, on each side  
 Mix'd with auxiliar Gods ; and what resounds  
 In fable or romance of Uther's son,  
 Begirt with British and Armoric knights ; 580  
 And all who since, baptiz'd or infidel,  
 Jousted in Aspramont or Montalban,  
 Damasco, or Marocco, or Trebisond ;  
 Or whom Biserta sent from Afric shore  
 When Charlemain with all his peerage fell 585  
 By Fontarabbia. Thus far these beyond  
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd  
 Their dread commander : he, above the rest  
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent,  
 Stood like a tow'r, his form had not yet lost 590  
 All her original brightness, nor appear'd  
 Less than Archangel ruin'd, and th' excess  
 Of glory' obscur'd ; as when the sun, new risen,  
 Looks through the horizontal misty air,  
 Shorn of his beams ; or from behind the moon, 595  
 In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds  
 On half the nations, and with fear of change  
 Perplexes monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shown  
 Above them all th' Archangel : but his face  
 Deep scars of thunder had intrench'd, and care 600  
 Sat on his faded cheek. but under brows  
 Of dauntless courage and considerate pride,  
 Waiting revenge : cruel his eye, but cast  
 Signs of remorse and passion to behold  
 The fellows of his crime, the followers rather, 605  
 (Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd  
 For ever now to have their lot in pain,  
 Millions of Spirits for his fault amerc'd  
 Of Heav'n, and from eternal splendors flung

For his revolt, yet faithful how they stood, 610  
 Their glory wither'd : as when Heav'n's fire  
 Hath scath'd the forest oaks, or mountain pines,  
 With singed top their stately growth, though bare,  
 Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepar'd 614  
 To speak ; whereat their doubled ranks they bend  
 From wing to wing, and half enclose him round  
 With all his peers : attention held them mute.  
 Thrice he assay'd ; and thrice, in spite of scorn,  
 Tears, such as Angels weep, burst forth : at last  
 Words, interwove with sighs, found out their way.  
 " O Myriads of immortal Spi'rits, O Powers 621  
 Matchless, but with th' Almighty ; and that strife  
 Was not inglorious, though the event was dire,  
 As this place testifies, and this dire change,  
 Hateful to utter : but what pow'r of mind, 625  
 Foreseeing or presaging, from the depth  
 Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd  
 How such united force of Gods, how such  
 As stood like these, could ever know repulse ?  
 For who can yet believe, though after loss, 630  
 That all these puissant legions, whose exile  
 Hath emptied Heav'n, shall fail to re-ascend,  
 Self-rais'd and re-possess their native seat ?  
 For me be witness all the host of Heav'n,  
 If counsels different, or danger shunn'd 635  
 By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns  
 Monarch in Heav'n, till then as one secure  
 Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,  
 Consent or custom, and his regal state 639  
 Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,  
 Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.  
 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own,  
 So as not either to provoke, or dread  
 New war, provok'd ; our better part remains  
 To work in close design, by fraud or guile, 645  
 What force effected not ; that he no less  
 At length from us may find, who overcomes  
 By force hath overcome but half his foe.

Space may produce new worlds ; whereof so rife  
 There went a fame in Heav'n that he ere long 650  
 Intended to create and therein plant  
 A generation, whom his choice regard  
 Should favour equal to the sons of Heaven :  
 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps  
 Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere ; 655  
 For this infernal pit shall never hold  
 Celestial Spi'rits in bondage, nor th' abyss  
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts  
 Full counsel must mature : Peace is despair'd,  
 For who can think submission ? War then, War 660  
 Open or understood, must be resolv'd."

He spake : and, to confirm his words, out flew  
 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs  
 Of mighty Cherubim ; the sudden blaze 665  
 Far round illumin'd Hell : highly they rag'd  
 Against the High'est, and fierce with grasped arms  
 Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,  
 Hurling defiance tow'ard the vault of Heav'n.

There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top  
 Belch'd fire and roling smoke ; the rest entire 670  
 Shone with a glossy scurf, undoubted sign  
 That in his womb was hid metallic ore,  
 The work of sulphur. Thither, wing'd with speed,  
 A numerous brigade hasten'd : as when bands  
 Of pioneers, with spade and pickax arm'd, 675  
 Forerun the royal camp, to trench a field,  
 Or cast a rampart. Mammon led them on ;  
 Mammon, the last erected Spi'rit that fell  
 From Heav'n ; for e'en in Heav'n his looks and thought  
 Were always downward bent, admiring more 680  
 The riches of Heav'n's pavement, trodden gold,  
 Than ought divine or holy else enjoy'd  
 In vision beatific : by him first  
 Men also, and by his suggestion taught,  
 Ransack'd the centre, and with impious hands 685  
 Rifled the bowels of their mother earth

For treasures better hid. Soon had his crew  
Open'd into the hill a spacious wound,  
And digg'd out ribs of gold. Let none admire  
That riches grow in hell ; that soil may best 690  
Reserve the precious bane. And here let those,  
Who boast in mortal things, and, wond'ring, tell  
Of Babel and the works of Memphian kings,  
Learn how their greatest monuments of fame,  
And strength and art, are easily out-done 695  
By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour  
What in an age they, with incessant toil  
And hands innumerable, scarce perform  
Nigh on the plain, in many cells prepar'd,  
That underneath had veins of liquid fire 700  
Sluic'd from the lake, a second multitude  
With wondrous art founded the massy ore,  
Severing each kind, and scumm'd the bullion dross  
A third as soon had form'd within the ground  
A various mould, and from the boiling cells, 705  
By strange conveyance, fill'd each hollow nook ;  
As in an organ from one blast of wind  
To many a row of pipes the sound-board breathes.  
Anon out of the earth a fabric huge  
Rose like an exhalation, with the sound 710  
Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet,  
Built like a temple, where pilasters round  
Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid  
With golden architrave ; nor did there want  
Cornice or frieze, with bossy sculptures graven ; 715  
The roof was fretted gold. Not Babylon,  
Nor great Alcairo, such magnificence  
Equall'd in all their glories, to inshrine  
Belus or Serapis their Gods, or seat  
Their kings, when Egypt with Assyria strove 72  
In wealth and luxury. Th' ascending pile  
Stood fix'd her stately height ; and straight the doors,  
Op'ning their brazen folds, discover wide  
Within her ample spaces o'er the smooth  
And level pavement ; from the arched roof,

Pendent by subtle magic, many a row  
 Of starry lamps and blazing cressets, fed  
 With Naptha and Asphaltus, yielded light  
 As from a sky. The hasty multitude,  
 Admiring, enter'd ; and the work some praise, 730  
 And some the architect ; his hand was known  
 In Heav'n by many a tow' red structure high,  
 Where scepter'd angels held their residence,  
 And sat as princes, whom the supreme King  
 Exalted to such pow'r, and gave to rule, 735  
 Each in his hierarchy, the orders bright.  
 Nor was his name unheard or unador'd  
 In ancient Greece ; and in Ausonian land  
 Men call'd him Mulciber ; and how he fell 739  
 From Heav'n they fabled, thrown by angry Jove  
 Sheer o'er the crystal battlements ; from morn  
 To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,  
 A summer's day ; and with the setting sun  
 Dropt from the zenith like a falling star,  
 On Lemnos th' Ægean isle ; thus they relate, 754  
 Erring ; for he with this rebellious rout  
 Fell long before ; nor aught avail'd him now  
 T' have built in Heav'n high tow'rs ; nor did he 'scape  
 By all his engines, but was headlong sent  
 With his industrious crew to build in Hell. 750

Meanwhile the winged heralds, by command  
 Of sov'reign pow'r, with awful ceremony  
 And trumpets' sound, throughout the host proclaim  
 A solemn council forthwith to be held  
 At Pandemonium, the high capital 755  
 Of Satan and his peers ; their summons call'd  
 From every band and squared regiment,  
 By place or choice, the worthiest ; they anon  
 With hundreds and with thousands trooping came  
 Attended ; all access was throng'd, the gates 760  
 And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall  
 (Though like a cover'd field, where champions bold  
 Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldan's chair  
 Desy'd the best of Panim chivalry

To mortal combat, or career with lance) 765  
 Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,  
 Brush'd with the hiss of rustling wings. As bees  
 In spring time, when the sun with Taurus rides,  
 Pour forth their populous youth about the hive  
 In clusters; they among fresh dews and flowers  
 Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed plank,  
 The suburb of their straw built citadel, 771  
 New rubb'd with balm, expatiate and confer  
 Their state affairs; so thick the airy crowd  
 Swarm'd and were straiten'd; till the signal giv'n  
 Behold a wonder! they, but now who seem'd 776  
 In bigness to surpass earth's giant sons,  
 Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room  
 Throng'd numberless; like that pygmean race  
 Beyond the Indian mount, or fairy elves, 780  
 Whose midnight revels, by a forest side  
 Or fountain, some belated peasant sees,  
 Or dreams he sees, while overhead the moon  
 Sits arbitress, and nearer to the earth  
 Wheels her pale corse, they, on their mirth and dance  
 Intent, with jocund music charm his ear; 786  
 At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.  
 Thus incorporeal Spi'rits to smallest forms  
 Reduc'd their shapes immense, and were at large,  
 Though without number, still amidst the hall 790  
 Of that infernal court. But far within,  
 And in their own dimensions like themselves,  
 The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim  
 In close recess and secret conclave sat,  
 A thousand Demi-gods on golden seats, 795  
 Frequent and full. After short silence then,  
 And summons read, the great consult began.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

---

PLANTING LIST

---

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

BOOK II.

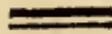
---

---

## ARGUMENT.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be to be hazarded for the recovery of Heaven: Some advise it, others dissuade. A third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in Heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature, equal or not much inferior, to themselves, about this time to be created. Their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search. Satan, their chief, undertakes alone the voyage; is honoured and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways, and to several employments, as their inclinations led them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to Hell gates; finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them; by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the gulf between Hell and Heaven; with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

# PARADISE LOST.



## BOOK II.

HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far  
Outshone the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,  
Or where the gorgeous east with richest hand  
Show'rs on her kings barbaric pearl and gold,  
Satan exalted sat, by merits rais'd 5  
To that bad eminence ; and, from despair  
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires  
Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue  
Vain war with Heav'n ; and, by success untaught,  
His proud imaginations, thus display'd. 10  
“ Pow'rs and Dominions, Deities of Heav'n !  
For, since no deep within her gulf can hold  
Immortal vigour, though oppress'd and fall'n,  
I give not Heav'n for lost. From this descent  
Celestial virtues, rising, will appear 15  
More glorious and more dread than from no fall,  
And trust themselves to fear no second fate.  
Me, though just right and the fix'd laws of Heaven  
Did first create your leader, next free choice,  
With what besides, in council or in fight, 20  
Hath been atchiev'd of merit, yet this loss,  
Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more  
Establish'd in a safe unenvied throne,  
Yielded with full consent. The happier state  
In Heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw 25  
Envy from each inferior ; but who here

Will envy whom the highest place exposes  
 Foremost to stand against the Thund'rer's aim  
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share  
 Of endless pain? Where there is then no good 30  
 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there  
 From faction; for none sure will claim in Hell  
 Precedence; none, whose portion is so small  
 Of present pain, that with ambitious mind  
 Will covet more. With this advantage then 35  
 'To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,  
 More than can be in Heav'n, we now return  
 To claim our just inheritance of old,  
 Surer to prosper than prosperity  
 Could have assur'd us; and by what best way, 40  
 Whether of open war or covert guile,  
 We now debate; who can advise may speak."

He ceas'd; and next him Moloch, scepter'd king,  
 Stood up; the strongest and fiercest Spirit  
 That fought in Heav'n, now fiercer by despair: 45  
 His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd  
 Equal in strength, and rather than be less,  
 Car'd not to be at all; with that care lost  
 Went all his fear: of God, or Hell, or worse,  
 He reck'd not, and these words thereafter spake. 50

"My sentence is for open war; of wiles,  
 More unexpert, I boast not; them let those  
 Contrive who need, or when they need, not now;  
 For, while they sit contriving, shall the rest, 55  
 Millions that stand in arms, and, longing, wait  
 The signal to ascend, sit ling'ring here  
 Heav'n's fugitives, and for their dwelling-place  
 Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,  
 The prison of his tyranny who reigns  
 By our delay? No, let us rather choose, 60  
 Arm'd with Hell-flames and fury, all at once  
 O'er Heav'n's high tow'rs to force resistless way,  
 Turning our tortures into horrid arms  
 Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise  
 Of his almighty engine he shall hear 65

Infernal thunder, and for lightning see  
 Black fire and horror shot with equal rage  
 Among his Angels, and his throne itself  
 Mix'd with Tartarean sulphur, and strange fire,  
 His own invented torments. But perhaps 70  
 The way seems difficult and steep, to scale  
 With upright-wing against a higher foe.  
 Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench  
 Of that forgetful lake benumb not still,  
 That in our proper motion we ascend 75  
 Up to our native seat : descent and fall  
 To us is adverse. Who but felt of late,  
 When the fierce foe hung on our broken rear,  
 Insulting, and pursued us through the deep,  
 With what compulsion and laborious flight 80  
 We sunk thus low ? Th' ascent is easy then ;  
 Th' event is fear'd ; should we again provoke  
 Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find  
 To our destruction, if there be in Hell  
 Fear to be worse destroy'd : what can be worse 85  
 Than to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss, condemn'd  
 In this abhorred deep to utter woe :  
 Where pain of unextinguishable fire  
 Must exercise us without hope of end  
 The vassals of his anger, when the scourge 90  
 Inexorably, and the torturing hour,  
 Calls us to penance ? More destroy'd than thus,  
 We should be quite abolish'd, and expire.  
 What fear we then ? what doubt we to incense  
 His utmost ire ? which, to the height enrag'd, 95  
 Will either quite consume us, and reduce  
 To nothing this essential (happier far  
 Than, miserable, to have eternal being ; )  
 Or, if our substance be indeed divine,  
 And cannot cease to be, we are at worst 100  
 On this side nothing ; and by proof we feel  
 Our pow'r sufficient to disturb his Heaven,  
 And with perpetual inroads to alarm,  
 Though inaccessible, his fatal throne ;  
 Which if not victory, is yet revenge." 105

He ended, frowning ; and his look denounc'd  
 Desp'rate revenge, and battle dangerous  
 To less than Gods. On th' other side uprose  
 Belial, in act more graceful and humane ;  
 A fairer person lost not Heav'n ; he seem'd 110,  
 For dignity compos'd and high exploit :  
 But all was false and hollow , though his tongue  
 Dropt manna, and could make the worse appear  
 The better reason, to perplex and dash  
 Maturest counsels ; for his thoughts were low ; 115  
 To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds  
 Timorous and slothful ; yet he pleas'd the ear,  
 And with persuasive accent thus began.  
 " I should be much for open war, O peers !  
 As not behind in hate, if what was urg'd 120  
 Main reason to persuade immediate war  
 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast  
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success :  
 When he, who most excels in fact of arms,  
 In what he counsels and in what excels 125  
 Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair,  
 And utter dissolution, as the scope  
 Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.  
 First, what revenge ? The tow'rs of Heav'n are fill'd  
 With armed watch, that render all access 130  
 Impregnable ; oft on the bord'ring deep  
 Encamp their legions, or with obscure wing  
 Scout far and wide into the realm of night,  
 Scorning surprise. Or, could we break our way  
 By force, and at our heels all hell should rise 135  
 With blackest insurrection, to confound  
 Heav'n's purest light, yet our great enemy,  
 All incorruptible, would on his throne  
 Sit unpolluted, and th' ethereal mould,  
 Incapable of stain, would soon expel 140  
 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,  
 Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope  
 Is flat despair : we must exasperate  
 Th' almighty Victor to spend all his rage,  
 And that must end us, that must be our cure, 145

To be no more: sad cure ; for who would lose,  
 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,  
 Those thoughts that wander through eternity,  
 To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost  
 In the wide womb of uncreated night, 150  
 Devoid of sense and motion ? and who knows,  
 Let this be good, whether our angry foe  
 Can give it, or will ever ? how he can  
 Is doubtful ; that he never will is sure.  
 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire, 155  
 Belike through impotence, or unaware,  
 To give his enemies their wish, and end  
 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves  
 To punish endless ? Wherefore cease we then ?  
 Say they who counsel war, we are decreed, 160  
 Reserv'd, and destin'd, to eternal woe :  
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,  
 What can we suffer worse ? Is this then worst,  
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms ?  
 What, when we fled amain, pursued and struck 165  
 With Heav'n's afflicting thunder, and besought  
 The deep to shelter us ? this Hell then seem'd  
 A refuge from those wounds : or when we lay  
 Chain'd on the burning lake ? that sure was worse.  
 What, if the breath, that kindled those grim fires, 170  
 Awak'd, should blow them into sev'nfold rage,  
 And plunge us in the flames ? or from above  
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again  
 His red right-hand to plague us ? what if all  
 Her stores were open'd, and this firmament 175  
 Of Hell should spout her cataracts of fire,  
 Impendent horrors, threat'ning hideous fall  
 One day upon our heads ; while we perhaps,  
 Designing or exhorting glorious war,  
 Caught in a fiery tempest, shall be hurl'd, 180  
 Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and prey  
 Of wracking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk  
 Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains ;  
 There to converse with everlasting groans,

Unrespited, unpitied, unrepriev'd, 185  
 Ages of hopeless end ! This would be worse.  
 War, therefore, open or conceal'd, alike  
 My voice dissuades ; for what can force or guile  
 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye  
 Views all things at one view? He from Heav'n's height 190  
 All these our motions vain sees and derides ;  
 Not more almighty to resist our might  
 Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.  
 Shall we then live thus vile, the race of Heaven  
 Thus trampled, thus expell'd to suffer here 195  
 Chains and these torments? better these than worse,  
 By my advice ; since fate inevitable  
 Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,  
 The victor's will. To suffer, as to do,  
 Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust 200  
 That so ordains : this was at first resolv'd,  
 If we were wise, against so great a foe  
 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.  
 I laugh when those, who at the spear are bold  
 And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink and fear 205  
 What yet they know must follow, to endure  
 Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,  
 The sentence of their conqu'ror, this is now  
 Our doom ; which, if we can sustain and bear,  
 Our supreme foe in time may much remit 210  
 His anger, and perhaps, thus far remov'd,  
 Not mind as, not offending, satisfy'd  
 With what is punish'd ; whence these raging fires  
 Will slaken, if his breath stir not their flames.  
 Our purer essence then will overcome 215  
 Their noxious vapour ; or, inur'd, not feel ;  
 Or, chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd  
 In temper and in nature, will receive  
 Familiar the fierce heat ; and, void of pain,  
 This horror will grow mild, this darkness light ; 220  
 Besides what hope the never-ending flight  
 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change

Worth waiting, since our present lot appears  
 For happy, though but ill, for ill not worst,  
 If we procure not to ourselves more woe." 235  
 Thus Belial, with words cloth'd in reason's garb,  
 Counsell'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,  
 Not peace; and after him thus Mammon spake.  
 " Either to disenthroned the king of Heaven  
 We war, if war be best, or to regain 230  
 Our own right, lost: him to unthroned we then  
 May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield  
 To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife:  
 The former vain to hope argues as vain  
 The latter: for what place can be for us 235  
 Within Heav'n's bound, unless Heav'n's Lord supreme  
 We overpower? Suppose he should relent,  
 And publish grace to all, on promise made  
 Of new subjection; with what eyes could we  
 Stand in his presence humble, and receive 240  
 Strict laws impos'd, to celebrate his throne  
 With warbled hymns, and to his Godhead sing  
 Forc'd hallelujahs; while he lordly sits  
 Our envied Sov'reign, and his altar breathes  
 Ambrosial odours and ambrosial flowers, 245  
 Our servile offerings? This must be our task  
 In Heav'n, this our delight; how wearisome  
 Eternity, so spent in worship paid  
 To whom we hate! Let us not then pursue  
 By force impossible, by leave obtain'd 250  
 Unacceptable, though in Heav'n, our state  
 Of splendid vassalage; but rather seek  
 Our own good from ourselves, and from our own  
 Live to ourselves, though in this vast recess,  
 Free, and to none accountable, preferring, 255  
 Hard liberty before the easy yoke  
 Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear  
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,  
 Useful of hurtful, prosp'rous of adverse  
 We can create, and in what place so'er 260  
 Thrive under ev'il, and work ease out of pain

Through labour and endurance. This deep world  
 Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst  
 Thick cloud and dark doth Heav'n's all-ruling Sire  
 Choose to reside, his glory unobscur'd, 265  
 And with the majesty of darkness round  
 Covers his throne: from whence deep thunders roar  
 Must'ring their rage, and Heav'n resembles Hell?  
 As he our darkness, cannot we his light  
 Imitate when we please? This desert soil 270  
 Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold,  
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise  
 Magnificence; and what can Heav'n shew more?  
 Our torments also may in length of time  
 Become our elements; these piercing fires 275  
 As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd  
 Into their temper; which must needs remove  
 The sensible of pain. All things invite  
 To peaceful counsels, and the settled state  
 Of order, how in safety best we may 280  
 Compose our present evils, with regard  
 Of what we are and where, dismissing quite  
 All thoughts of war. Ye have what I advise."

He scarce had finish'd when such murmur fill'd  
 Th' assembly, as when hollow rocks retain 285  
 The sound of blust'ring winds, which all night long  
 Had rous'd the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull  
 Seafaring men o'erwatch'd, whose bark by chance,  
 Or pinnace, anchors in a craggy bay  
 After the tempest: Such applause was heard 290  
 As Mammon ended; and his sentence pleas'd,  
 Advising peace: for such another field  
 They dreaded worse than Hell: so much the fear  
 Of thunder and the sword of Michael  
 Wrought still within them; and no less desire 295  
 To found this nether empire, which might rise  
 By policy, and long process of time,  
 In emulation opposite to Heaven.  
 Which when Beëlzebub perceiv'd, than whom,  
 Satan except, none higher sat, with grave 300

Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd  
 A pill'ar of state ; deep on his front engraven,  
 Deliberation sat and public care ;  
 And princely counsel in his face yet shone  
 Majestic, though in ruin : sage he stood, 305  
 With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear  
 The weight of mightiest monarchies ; his look  
 Drew audience and attention, still as night  
 Or summer's noontide air, while thus he spake.  
 " Thrones and Imperial Pow'rs, Offspring of Heaven,  
 Etherial Virtues ! or these titles now 311  
 Must we renounce, and changing style be call'd  
 Princes of Hell ? for so the popular vote  
 Inclines, here to continue', and build up here  
 A growing empire ; doubtless ; while we dream, 315  
 And know not that the King of Heav'n hath doom'd  
 This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat  
 Beyond his potent arm, to live exempt  
 From Heav'n's high jurisdiction, in new league  
 Banded against his throne, but to remain 320  
 In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd,  
 Under th' inevitable curb, reserv'd  
 His captive multitude : for he, be sure,  
 In height or depth, still first and last will reign  
 Sole king, and of his kingdom lose no part 325  
 By our revolt : but over Hell extend  
 His empire, and with iron sceptre rule  
 Us here, as with his golden those in Heaven.  
 What sit we then projecting peace and war ?  
 War hath determin'd us, and foild with loss 330  
 Irreparable ; terms of peace yet none  
 Vouchsaf'd or sought ; for what peace will be given  
 To us enslav'd ; but custody severe,  
 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment,  
 Inflicted ? and what peace can we return, 335  
 But to our pow'r hostility and hate,  
 Untam'd reluctance, and revenge, though slow,  
 Yet ever plotting how the Conqu'ror least  
 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice

In doing what we most in suffering feel ? 340  
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need,  
 With dang'rous expedition to invade  
 Heav'n whose high walls fear no assault or siege,  
 Or ambush from the deep. What if we find  
 Some easier enterprise ? There is a place, 345  
 (If ancient and prophetic fame in Heaven  
 Err not) another world the happy seat  
 Of some new race call'd Man, about this time  
 To be created like to us, though less  
 In pow'r and excellence, but favour'd more 350  
 Of him who rules above ; so was his will  
 Pronounc'd among the Gods, and by an oath,  
 That shook Heav'n's whole circumference, confirm'd.  
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn  
 What creatures there inhabit, of what mould 355  
 Or substance, how endued, and what their pow'r,  
 And where their weakness, how attempted best,  
 By force or subtlety. Though Heav'n be shut,  
 And Heav'n's high Arbitrator sit secure  
 In his own strength, this place may lie expos'd, 360  
 The utmost border of his kingdom, left  
 To their defence who hold it : here perhaps  
 Some advantageous act may be achiev'd  
 By sudden onset, either with Hell fire  
 To waste his whole creation, or possess 365  
 All as our own, and drive, as we were driven,  
 The puny habitants ; or, if not drive,  
 Seduce them to our party, that their God  
 May prove their foe, and with repenting hand  
 Abolish his own works. This would surpass 370  
 Common revenge, and interrupt his joy  
 In our confusion, and our joy upraise  
 In his disturbance ; when his darling sons,  
 Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse  
 Their frail original, and faded bliss, 375  
 Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth  
 Attempting, or to sit in darkness here  
 Hatching vain empires." Thus Beëlzebub

Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devis'd  
 By Satan, and in part propos'd ; for whence, 380  
 But from the author of all ill could spring  
 So deep a malice, to confound the race  
 Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell  
 To mingle and involve done all to spite  
 The great Creator ? but their spite still serves 385  
 His glory to augment. The bold design  
 Pleas'd highly those infernal States, and joy  
 Sparkled in all their eyes ; with full assent  
 They vote : whereat his speech he thus renews.  
 " Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate, 390  
 Synod of Gods, and like to what ye are,  
 Great things resolv'd, which from the lowest deep  
 Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,  
 Nearer our ancient seat : perhaps in view  
 Of those bright confines, whence with neigh'ring arms  
 And opportune excursion we may chance 396  
 Re-enter Heav'n ; or else in some mild zone  
 Dwell, not unvisited of Heav'n's fair light,  
 Secure, and at the bright'ning orient beam  
 Purge off this gloom ; the soft delicious air, 400  
 To heal the scar of these corrosive fires,  
 Shall breath her balm. But, first, whom shall we send  
 In search of this new world ? whom shall we find  
 Sufficient ? who shall tempt with wand'ring feet  
 The dark unbottom'd infinite abyss, 405  
 And through the palpable obscure find out  
 His uncouth way, or spread his airy flight,  
 Upborne with indefatigable wings,  
 Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive  
 The happy isle ? what strength, what art, can then  
 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe 411  
 Through the strict senteries and stations thick  
 Of Angels watching round ? Here he had need  
 All circumspection, and we now no less  
 Choice in our suffrage ; for on whom we send 415  
 The weight of all, and our last hope, relies."

This said, he sat ; and expectation held

His looks suspense, awaiting who appear'd  
 To second, or oppose, or undertake,  
 The perilous attempt : but all sat mute, 420  
 Pond'ring the danger with deep thoughts ; and each  
 In others' count'nance read his own dismay,  
 Astonish'd : none among the choice and prime  
 Of those Heav'n-warring champions could be found  
 So hardy as to proffer or accept 425  
 Alone the dreadful voyage ; till at last  
 Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd  
 Above his fellows, with monarchical pride  
 Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd, thus spake.  
 " O Progeny of Heav'n, empyreal Thrones ! 430  
 With reason hath deep silence and demur  
 Seiz'd us, though undismay'd : long is the way,  
 And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light ;  
 Our prison strong ; this huge convex of fire,  
 Outrageous to devour, immures us round 435  
 Ninefold, and gates of burning adamant,  
 Barr'd over us, prohibit all egress.  
 These pass'd, if any pass, the void profound  
 Of unessential Night receives him next,  
 Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being 440  
 Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.  
 If thence he 'scape into whatever world,  
 Or unknown region, what remains him less  
 Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape ?  
 But I should ill become this throne, O Peers, 445  
 And this imperial sov'reignty, adorn'd  
 With splendor, arm'd with pow'r, if ought propos'd  
 And judg'd of public moment, in the shape  
 Of difficulty or danger, could deter  
 Me from attempting. Wherefore do' I assume 450  
 These royalties, and not refuse to reign,  
 Refusing to accept as great a share  
 Of hazard as of honour, due alike  
 To him who reigns, and so much to him due  
 Of hazard more, as he above the rest 455  
 High honour'd sits ? Go, therefore, mighty Powers,

Terror of Heav'n though fall'n ; intend at home,  
 While here shall be our home, what best may ease  
 The present misery, and render Hell  
 More tolerable ; if there be cure or charm 460  
 To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain,  
 Of this ill mansion : intermit no watch  
 Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad,  
 Through all the coasts of dark destruction, seek  
 Deliverance for us all. This enterprise 465  
 None shall partake with me." Thus saying, rose  
 The Monarch, and prevented all reply ;  
 Prudent, lest, from his resolution rais'd,  
 Others among the chief might offer now  
 (Certain to be refus'd) what erst they fear'd ; 470  
 And, so refus'd, might in opinion stand  
 His rivals, winning cheap the high repute  
 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they  
 Dreaded not more th' adventure than his voice  
 Forbidding ; and at once with him they rose. 475  
 Their rising all at once was as the sound  
 Of thunder heard remote. Tow'ards him they bend,  
 With awful reverence prone ; and as a God  
 Extol him equal to the High'st in Heaven.  
 Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd  
 That for the general safety he despis'd 481  
 His own : for neither do the Spirits damn'd  
 Lose all their virtue ; lest bad men should boast  
 Their specious deeds on earth, which glory' excites,  
 Or close ambition varnish'd o'er with zeal. 485  
 Thus they their doubtful consultations dark  
 Ended, rejoicing in their matchless chief :  
 As when from mountain tops their dusky clouds  
 Ascending, while the north wind sleeps, o'erspread  
 Heav'n's cheerful face, the low'ring element 490  
 Scowls o'er the darken'd landskip snow, or shower ;  
 If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet  
 Extend his evening beam, the fields revive,  
 The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds  
 Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings. 495

O shame to men ! Devil with Devil damn'd  
 Firm concord holds ; men only disagree  
 Of creatures rational, though under hope  
 Of heavenly grace ; and, God proclaiming peace,  
 Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife, 500  
 Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,  
 Wasting the earth, each other to destroy !  
 As if (which might induce us to accord)  
 Man had not hellish foes enow beside,  
 That day and night for his destruction wait. 505

The Stygian council thus dissolv'd, and forth  
 In order came the grand infernal peers ;  
 Midst came the mighty Paramount, and seem'd  
 Alone th' Antagonist of Heav'n, nor less  
 Than Hell's dread emperor, with pomp supreme, 510  
 And God-like imitated state ; him round  
 A globe of fiery Seraphim enclos'd  
 With bright emblazonry, and horrent arms.  
 Then, of their session ended, they bid cry,  
 With trumpets' regal sound, the great result. 515  
 Tow'rd's the four winds four speedy Cherubim  
 Put to their mouths the sounding alchemy,  
 By heralds' voice explain'd ; the hollow' abyss  
 Heard far and wide, and all the host of Hell  
 With deaf'ning shout return'd them loud acclaim. 520  
 Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat rais'd  
 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged Powers  
 Disband, and, wand'ring, each his several way  
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice  
 Leads him, perplex'd where he may likeliest find  
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain 526  
 The irkesome hours till his great Chief return.  
 Part on the plain, or in the air sublime,  
 Upon the wing or in swift race contend,  
 As at th' Olympian games or Pythian fields ; 530  
 Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal  
 With rapid-wheels, or fronted brigades form.  
 As when to warn proud cities war appears  
 Wag'd in the troubled sky, and armies rush

To battle in the clouds, before each van 535  
 Prick forth the airy knights, and couch their spears  
 Till thickest legions close ; with feats of arms  
 From either end of Heav'n the welkin burns.  
 Others, with vast Typhoean rage, more fell,  
 Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air 540  
 In whirlwind : Hell scarce holds the wild uproar.  
 As when Alcides, from Oechalia crown'd  
 With conquest, felt th' envenom'd robe, and tore  
 Through pain up by the roots Thessalian pines,  
 And Lichas from the top of Oeta threw 545  
 Into th' Euboic sea. Others more mild,  
 Retreated in a silent valley, sing  
 With notes angelical to many a harp  
 Their own heroic deeds and hapless fall  
 By doom of battle ; and complain that fate 550  
 Free virtue should intrall to force or chance.  
 Their song was partial, but the harmony  
 (What could it less when Spi'rits immortal sing !)  
 Suspeaded Hell, and took with ravishment  
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet,  
 (For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense) 556  
 Others apart sat on a hill retir'd,  
 In thoughts more elevate ; and reason'd high  
 Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate,  
 Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute ; 560  
 And found no end, in wand'ring mazes lost.  
 Of good and evil much they argued then,  
 Of happiness and final misery,  
 Passion and apathy, and glory' and shame,  
 Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy : 565  
 Yet with a pleasing sorcery could charm  
 Pain for a while or anguish, and excite  
 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdurate breast  
 With stubborn patience as with triple steel.  
 Another part in squadrons and gross bands, 570  
 On bold adventure to discover wide  
 That dismal world, if any clime perhaps  
 Might yield them easier habitation, bend

Four ways their flying march, along the banks  
 Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge 575  
 Into the burning lake their baleful streams ;  
 Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate ;  
 Sad Acheron of sorrow black and deep ;  
 Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud  
 Heard on the rueful stream ; fierce Phlegethon, 580  
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.  
 Far off from these a slow and silent stream,  
 Lethæ, the river of oblivion, rolls  
 Her wat'ry labyrinth, whereof who drinks  
 Forthwith his former state and be'ing forgets, 585  
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain,  
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent  
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms  
 Of whirlwind, and dire hail, which on firm land  
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590  
 Of ancient pile ; all else deep snow and ice,  
 A gulf profound as that Serbonian bog  
 Betwixt Damiatra and mount Casius old,  
 Where armies whole have sunk : the parching air  
 Burns fre, and cold performs th' effect of fire. 595  
 Thither, by harpy-footed furies hal'd,  
 At certain revolutions, all the damn'd  
 Are brought ; and feel by turns the bitter change  
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,  
 From beds of raging fire to starve in ice 600  
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
 Immoveable, infix'd, and frozen round,  
 Periods of time ; thence hurried back to fire.  
 They ferry over this Lethæan sound,  
 Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment, 605  
 And wish and struggle as they pass, to reach  
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose  
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,  
 All in one moment, and so near the brink ;  
 But fate withstands, and to oppose th' attempt 610  
 Medusa with Gorgonian terror guards  
 The ford, and of itself the water flies

All taste of living wight, as once it fled  
 The lip of Tantalus. Thus, roving on  
 In cónfus'd march forlorn, th' advent'rous bands, 615  
 With shudd'ring horror pale, and eyes aghast,  
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found  
 No rest: through many a dark and dreary vale  
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,  
 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp, 620  
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of  
 death,  
 A universe of death, which God by curse,  
 Created ev'il, for evil only good,  
 Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,  
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things, 625  
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse  
 Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,  
 Gorgons and Hydras, and Chimæras dire.  
 Meanwhile the Adversary' of God and Man  
 Satan, with thoughts inflam'd of highest design, 630  
 Puts on swift wings, and tow'ards the gates of Hell  
 Explores his solitary flight; sometimes  
 He scours the right-hand coast, sometimes the left,  
 Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars  
 Up to the fiery concave, tow'ring high. 635  
 As when far off at sea a fleet descry'd  
 Hangs in the clouds, by equinoxial winds  
 Close sailing from Bengala, or the isles  
 Of Ternate and Tidore' whence merchants bring  
 Their spicy drugs: they on the trading flood 640  
 Through the wide Ethiopian to the Cape  
 Ply, stemming nightly tow'ard the pole. So seem'd  
 Far off the flying Fiend: at last appear  
 Hell bounds, high reaching to the horrid roof,  
 And thrice threefold the gates; three folds were brass,  
 Three iron, three of adamantine rock; 646  
 Impenetrable, impaled with circling fire,  
 Yet unconsum'd. Before the gates there sat  
 On either side a formidable shape;  
 The one seem'd woman to the waist and fair, 650

But ended foul in many a scaly fold  
 Voluminous and vast, a serpent arm'd  
 With mortal sting; about her middle round  
 A cry of Heli-hounds, never ceasing, bark'd,  
 With wide Cerberian mouth, full loud, and rung 655  
 A hideous peal: yet, when they list, would creep,  
 If ought disturb'd their noise, into her womb,  
 And kennel there; yet there still bark'd and howl'd,  
 Within unseen. Far less abhorr'd than these  
 Vex'd Scylla, bathing in the sea that parts 660  
 Calabria from the hoarse Trinacrian shore:  
 Nor uglier follow the night-hag, when, call'd  
 In secret, riding through the air, she comes,  
 Lur'd with the smell of infant blood, to dance  
 With Lapland witches, while the lab'ring moon 665  
 Eclipses at their charms. The other shape,  
 If shape it might be call'd that shape had none,  
 Distinguishable in member joint or limb;  
 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd;  
 For each seem'd either; black it stood as Night, 670  
 Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,  
 And shook a dreadful dart: what seem'd his head  
 The likeness of a kingly crown had on,  
 Satan was now at hand; and from his seat  
 The monster, moving onward, came as fast 675  
 With horrid strides; Hell trembled as he strode.  
 Th' undaunted Fiend what this might be admir'd;  
 Admir'd, not fear'd; God and his Son except,  
 Created thing nought valu'd he, nor shunn'd;  
 And with disdainful look thus first began. 680  
 "Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,  
 That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance  
 Thy miscreated front athwart my way  
 To yonder gates? through them I mean to pass,  
 That be assured, without leave ask'd of thee: 685  
 Retire or taste thy folly; and learn by proof,  
 Hell-born, not to contend with Spi'rits of Heav'n."  
 To whom the goblin full of wrath reply'd;  
 "Art thou that traitor Angel, art thou He,

Who first broke peace in Heav'n and faith, till then  
 Unbroken, and in proud rebellious arms 690  
 Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's sons,  
 Conjur'd against the High'est, for which both thou  
 And they, outcast from God, are here condemn'd  
 To waste eternal days in woe and pain? 695  
 And reckon'st thou thyself with Spi'rits of Heav'n,  
 Hell-doom'd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn  
 Where I reign king, and, to enrage the more,  
 Thy king and lord? Back to thy punishment,  
 False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings, 700  
 Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue  
 Thy ling'ring, or with one stroke of this dart  
 Strange horrors seize thee, and pangs unfelt before."

So spake the grisly terror, and in shape,  
 So speaking and so threat'ning, grew tenfold 705  
 More dreadful and deform: on th' other side,  
 Incens'd with indignation, Satan stood  
 Unterrify'd, and like a comet burn'd,  
 That fires the length of Ophiuchus huge  
 In the arctic sky, and from his horrid hair 710  
 Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head  
 Level'd his deadly aim; their fatal hands  
 No second stroke intend; and such a frown  
 Each cast at th' other, as when two black clouds,  
 With Heav'n's artillery fraught, come rattling on 715  
 Over the Caspian, then stand front to front  
 Hov'ring a space, till winds the signal blow  
 To join the dark encounter in mid-air:  
 So frown'd the mighty combatants, that Hell  
 Grew darker at their frown, so match'd they stood;  
 For never but once more was either like 721  
 To meet so great a foe. And now great deeds  
 Had been achiev'd, whereof all Hell had rung,  
 Had not the snaky sorceress that sat  
 Farst by Hell gate, and kept the fatal key, 725  
 Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

"O Father, what intends thy hand," she cry'd,  
 "Against thy only Son? What fury, O Son,

Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart  
 Against thy Father's head? and know'st for whom ;  
 For him who sits above and laughs the while 731  
 At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute  
 What'er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids ;  
 His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both." }  
 She spake, and at her words the hellish pest 735  
 Forbore : then these to her Satan return'd.  
 " So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange  
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand,  
 Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds  
 What it intends, till first I know of thee 740  
 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why,  
 In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st  
 Me Father, and that phantasm call'st my Son ;  
 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now  
 Sight more detestable than him and thee." 745  
 T' whom thus the portress of Hell gate reply'd.  
 " Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem  
 Now in thine eyes so foul? once deem'd so fair  
 In Heav'n, when at th' assembly, and in sight  
 Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd 750  
 In bold conspiracy against Heav'n's king,  
 All on a sudden miserable pain  
 Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes and dizzy swum  
 In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast  
 Threw forth, till, on the left side opening wide, 755  
 Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright,  
 Then shining heav'nly fair, a goddess arm'd  
 Out of thy head I sprung : amazement seiz'd  
 All th' host of Heaven ; back they recoil'd, afraid  
 At first, and call'd me *Sin*, and for a sign 760  
 Portentous held me ; but, familiar grown,  
 I pleas'd, and with attractive graces won  
 The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft,  
 Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing,  
 Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st 765  
 With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd  
 A growing burden. Meanwhile war arose,

And fields were fought in Heav'n ; wherein remain'd  
 (For what could else ?) to our Almighty Foe  
 Clear victory, to our part loss and rout 770  
 Through all the empyrean : down they fell,  
 Driv'n headlong from the pitch of Heaven, down  
 Into this deep, and in the general fall  
 I also ; at which time this powerful key  
 Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep 775  
 These gates for ever shut, which none can pass  
 Without my opening. Pensive here I sat  
 Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb,  
 Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,  
 Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes. 780  
 At last this odious offspring whom thou seest,  
 Thine own begotten, breaking violent way,  
 Tore through my entrails, that, with fear and pain  
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew  
 Transform'd ? but he my inbred enemy 785  
 Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart,  
 Made to destroy : I fled, and cry'd out, *Death !*  
 Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd  
 From all her caves, and back resounded, *Death.*  
 I fled ; but he pursu'd, (though more, it seems, 790  
 Inflam'd with lust than rage) and, swifter far,  
 Me overtook, his mother, all dismay'd,  
 And in embraces forcible and foul,  
 Engendering with me, of that rape begot  
 These yelling monsters, that with ceaseless cry 795  
 Surround me, as thou saw'st, hourly conceiv'd  
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite  
 To me ; for when they list into the womb  
 That bred them they return, and howl and gnaw  
 My bowels, their repast ; then, bursting forth 800  
 Afresh, with conscious terrors vex me round,  
 That rest or intermission none I find.  
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits  
 Grim Death, my son and foe, who sets them on,  
 And me his parent would full soon devour 805  
 For want of other prey, but that he knows

His end with mine involv'd, and knows that I  
 Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane,  
 Whenever that shall be ; so fate pronounc'd,  
 But thou, O Father, I forewarn thee, shun 810  
 His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope  
 'To be invulnerable in those bright arms,  
 Though temper'd heav'nly, for that mortal dint,  
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist."

She finish'd, and the subtle Fiend his lore 815  
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.  
 "Dear daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy sire,  
 And my fair son here show'st me, the dear pledge  
 Of dalliance had with thee in Heav'n, and joys  
 Then sweet, now sad to mention, thro' dire change  
 Befall'n us unforeseen, unthought of ; know 821  
 I come no enemy, but to set free  
 From out this dark and dismal house of pain  
 Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly host  
 Of spi'rits, that, in our just pretences arm'd, 825  
 Fell with us from on high : from them I go  
 This uncouth errand sole, and one for all  
 Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread  
 Th' unfounded deep, and through the void immense  
 To search with wand'ring quest a place foretold 830  
 Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now  
 Created vast and round, a place of bliss  
 In the perlieus of Heav'n, and therein plac'd  
 A race of upstart creatures, to supply  
 Perhaps our vacant room, tho' more remov'd, 835  
 Lest Heav'n, surcharg'd with potent multitude,  
 Might hap to move new broils : Be this or ought  
 Than this more secret now design'd, I haste  
 To know, and, this once known, shall soon return,  
 And bring ye to the place where thou and Death  
 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen 841  
 Wing silently the buxom air, imbalm'd  
 With odours ; there ye shall be fed and fill'd  
 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey."

He ceas'd, for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and Death

Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear 846  
His famine should be fill'd, and blest his maw  
Destin'd to that good hour: no less rejoic'd  
His mother bad, and thus bespake her sire.  
" The key of this infernal pit by due, 850  
And by command of Heav'n's all powerful King,  
I keep, by him forbidden to unlock  
These adamantine gates: against all force  
Death ready stands to interpose his dart,  
Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might. 855  
But what owe I to his commands above  
Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down  
Into this gloom of Tartarus profound,  
To sit in hateful office here confin'd,  
Inhabitant of Heav'n, and heav'nly born, 860  
Here in perpetual agony and pain,  
With terrors and with clamours compass'd round  
Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed?  
Thou art my father, thou my author, thou  
My being gav'st me; whom should I obey 865  
But thee, whom follow? thou wilt bring me soon  
To that new world of light and bliss, among  
The Gods who live at ease, where I shall reign  
At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems  
Thy daughter and thy darling, without end." 870  
Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,  
Sad instrument of all our woe, she took;  
And, tow'ards the gate rolling her bestial train,  
Forthwith the huge portcullis high up drew,  
Which, but herself, not all the Stygian powers 875  
Could once have mov'd; then in the key-hole turns  
Th' intricate wards, and every bolt and bar  
Of massy ir'on or solid rock with ease  
Unfastens: on a sudden open fly,  
With impetuous recoil and jarring sound, 880  
Th' infernal doors, and on their hinges grate  
Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook  
Of Erebus. She open'd, but to shut  
Excell'd her pow'r; the gates wide open stood,

That with extended wings a banner'd host, 885  
 Under spread ensigns marching, might pass thro',  
 With horse and chariots rank'd in loose array ;  
 So wide they stood, and like a furnace mouth  
 Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame,  
 Before their eyes in sudden view appear 890  
 The secrets of the hoary deep, a dark  
 Illimitable ocean, without bound,  
 Without dimension ; where length, breadth, and height,  
 And time, and place, are lost ; where eldest Night  
 And Chaos, ancestors of nature, hold 895  
 Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise  
 Of endless wars, and by confusion stand.  
 For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four champions fierce,  
 Strive here for mast'ry, and to battle bring  
 Their embryon atoms ; they around the flag 900  
 Of each his faction, in their several clans,  
 Light arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift or slow,  
 Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the sands  
 Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid soil,  
 Levied to side with warring winds, and poise 905  
 Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,  
 He rules a moment ; Chaos umpire sits,  
 And by decision more embroils the fray  
 By which he reigns ; next him high arbiter  
 Chance governs all. Into this wild abyss, 910  
 The womb of nature, and perhaps her grave,  
 Of nether sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,  
 But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd  
 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,  
 Unless the Almighty Maker them ordain 915  
 His dark materials to create more worlds ;  
 Into this wild abyss the wary Fiend  
 Stood on the brink of Hell and look'd a while,  
 Pond'ring his voyage ; for no narrow frith  
 He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd 920  
 With noises loud and ruinous (to compare  
 Great things with small) than when Bellona storms,  
 With aher battering engines bent to raze

Some capital city<sup>3</sup> ; or less than if this frame  
 Of Heav'n were falling, and these elements 925  
 In mutiny had from her axle torn  
 The steadfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans  
 He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoke  
 Uplifted spurns the ground, thence many a league,  
 As in a cloudy chair, ascending, rides 930  
 Audacious ; but, that seat soon failing, meets  
 A vast vacuity : all unawares,  
 Fluttering his pennons vain, plumb down he drops  
 Ten thousand fathom deep, and to this hour  
 Down had been falling, had not by ill chance 935  
 The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud,  
 Instinct with fire and nitre, hurried him  
 As many miles aloft : that fury stay'd,  
 Quench'd in a boggy Syrtis, neither sea  
 Nor good dry land, nigh founder'd, on he fares, 940  
 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,  
 Half-flying ; behoves him now both oar and sail.  
 As when a gryphon through the wilderness  
 With winged course, o'er hill or moory dale,  
 Pursues the Arimaspien, who by stealth 945  
 Had from his wakeful custody purloin'd  
 The guarded gold : so eagerly the Fiend  
 O'er bog, or steep, thro' strait, rough, dense, or rare,  
 With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way,  
 And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies : 950  
 At length a universal hubbub wild  
 Of stunning sounds and voices all confus'd,  
 Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear  
 With loudest vehemence : thither he plies,  
 Undaunted to meet there whatever power 955  
 Or spirit of the nethermost abyss  
 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask  
 Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies  
 Bord'ring on light ; when strait behold the throne  
 Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread 960  
 Wide on the wasteful deep, with him enthron'd,  
 Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,

The consort of his reign ; and by them stood  
 Orcus and Ades, and the dreaded name  
 Of Demogorgon ; Rumour next, and Chance, 965  
 And Tumult, and Confusion, all embroil'd,  
 And Discord, with a thousand various mouths.

T' whom Satan, turning boldly, thus. " Ye Powers  
 And Spirits of this nethermost abyss,  
 Chaos and ancient Night, I come no spy, 970  
 With purpose to explore or to disturb

The secrets of your realm, but by constraint  
 Wand'ring this darksome desert, as my way  
 Lies through your spacious empire up to light,  
 Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek 975

What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds  
 Confine with Heaven ; or, if some other place,  
 From your dominion won, th' ethereal King  
 Possesses lately, thither to arrive

I travel this profound ; direct my course ; 980  
 Directed, no mean recompense it brings  
 To your behoof, if I that region lost,  
 All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce

To her original darkness and your sway,  
 (Which is my present journey) and once more 985  
 Erect the standard there of ancient Night ;  
 Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge."

Thus Satan ; and him thus the Anarch old,  
 With falt'ring speech and visage incompos'd,  
 Answer'd. " I know thee, stranger, who thou art, 991  
 That mighty leading Angel, who of late

Made head against Heav'n's King, tho' overthrown.  
 I saw and heard, for such a numerous host  
 Fled not in silence through the frighted deep  
 With ruin upon ruin. rout on rout, 995

Confusion worse confounded ; and Heav'n gates  
 Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands,  
 Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here  
 Keep residence ; if all I can will serve

That little which is left so to defend, 1000  
 Encroach'd on still through your intestine broils,

- Weak'ning the sceptre of old Night : first Hell  
 Your dungeon stretching far and wide beneath ;  
 Now lately Heav'n and Earth, another world,  
 Hung o'er my realm, link'd in a golden chain 1005  
 To that side Heav'n from whence your legions fell :  
 If that way be your walk, you have not far ;  
 So much the nearer danger ; go, and speed ;  
 Havoc, and spoil, and ruin are my gain."
- He ceas'd ; and Satan stay'd not to reply, 1010  
 But, glad that now his sea should find a shore,  
 With fresh alacrity and force renew'd,  
 Springs upward like a pyramid of fire,  
 Into the wild expanse, and through the shock  
 Of fighting elements, on all sides round 1015  
 Environ'd winds his way ; harder beset ;  
 And more endanger'd, than when Argo pass'd  
 Through Bosphorus betwixt the jostling rocks ;  
 Or when Ulysses on the larboard shunn'd  
 Charybdis, and by the other whirlpool steer'd.  
 So he with difficulty' and labour hard 1021  
 Mov'd on with difficulty' and labour he :  
 But he, once past, soon after, when man fell,  
 (Strange alteration !) Sin and Death amain,  
 Following his track, (such was the will of Heaven)  
 Pav'd after him a broad and beaten way 1026  
 Over the dark abyss, whose boiling gulf  
 Tamely endur'd a bridge of wondrous length,  
 From Hell continu'd, reaching the utmost orb  
 Of this frail world ; by which the Spi'rits perverse  
 With easy intercourse pass to and fro 1031  
 To tempt or punish mortals, except whom  
 God and good Angels guard by special grace.  
 But now at last the sacred influence  
 Of light appears, and from the walls of Heaven  
 Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night 1036  
 A glimmering dawn : here Nature first begins  
 Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire,  
 As from her outmost works a broken foe,  
 With tumult less and with less hostile din ; 1040

That Satan with less toil, and now with ease,  
Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light,  
And, like a weather-beaten vessel, holds  
Gladly the port, though shrouds and tackle torn ;  
Or in the emptier waste, resembling air, 1045  
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold  
Far off th' empyreal Heav'n, extended wide  
In circuit, undetermin'd square or round,  
With opal tow'rs and battlements adorn'd  
Of living sapphire, once his native seat ; 1050  
And fast by hanging in a golden chain  
This pendent world, in bigness as a star  
Of smallest magnitude close by the moon.  
Thither, full fraught with mischievous revenge,  
Accurs'd and in a cursed hour, he hies.

END OF THE SECOND BOOK.

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

**BOOK III.**

---

---

**BOOK III.**

**F 2**

## ARGUMENT.

God, sitting on his throne, sees Satan, flying towards this world, then newly created; shews him to the Son who sat at his right hand; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free, and able enough to have withstood his tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduced. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards Man; but God again declares, that grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of divine justice: Man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to Godhead, and therefore, with all his progeny devoted to death, must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for Man. The Father accepts him; ordains his incarnation; pronounces his exaltation above all names in Heaven and Earth; commands all the Angels to adore him: they obey, and hymning to their harps in full quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Meanwhile Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb; where, wandering, he first finds a place, since called 'The Limbo of Vanity;' what persons and things fly up thither; thence comes to the gate of Heaven, described ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it. His passage thence to the orb of the sun: he finds there Uriel, the regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner Angel, and, pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and Man whom God had placed here, enquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on mount Niphates.

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK III.

HAIL, holy Light, offspring of Heav'n first-born !  
Or of th' Eternal coeternal beam  
May I express thee' unblam'd? since God is light,  
And never but in unapproach'd light  
Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee, 5  
Bright effluence of bright essence increate.  
Or hear'st thou rather, pure ethereal stream,  
Whose fountain who shall tell? before the sun,  
Before the Heav'ns thou wert, and at the voice  
Of God, as with a mantle didst invest 10  
The rising world of waters dark and deep,  
Won from the void and formless infinite,  
Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,  
Escap'd the Stygian pool, though long detain'd  
In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight 15  
Through utter and through middle darkness borne,  
With other notes than to th' Orphéan lyre,  
I sung of Chaos and eternal Night,  
Taught by the heav'nly Muse to venture down  
The dark descent, and up to re-ascend, 20  
Though hard and rare : thee I revisit safe,  
And feel thy sov'reign vital lamp ; but thou  
Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain  
To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn ;  
So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs, 25  
Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more  
Cease I to wander, where the Muses haunt  
Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,

Smit with the love of sacred song ! but chief  
 Thee, Sion, and the flow'ry brooks beneath, 30  
 That wash thy hallow'd feet and warbling flow,  
 Nightly I visit : nor sometimes forget  
 Those other two equall'd with me in fate,  
 So were I equall'd with them in renown,  
 Blind Thamyris and blind Mæonides, 35  
 And Tiresias and Phineus, prophets old ;  
 Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move  
 Harmonious numbers ; as the wakeful bird  
 Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid  
 Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year 40  
 Seasons return, but not to me returns  
 Day or the sweet approach of ev'n or morn,  
 Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,  
 Or flocks or herds, or human face divine ;  
 But cloud instead, and ever-during dark 45  
 Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men  
 Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair  
 Presented with an universal blank  
 Of nature's works, to me expung'd and ras'd,  
 And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out. 50  
 So much the rather thou, celestial Light,  
 Shine inward, and the mind thro' all her powers  
 Irradiate ; there plant eyes, all mist from thence  
 Purge and disperse that I may see and tell  
 Of things invisible to mortal sight. 55

Now had th' almighty Father from above,  
 From the pure empyrean where he sits  
 High thro' above all height, bent down his eye,  
 His own works and their works at once to view.  
 About him all the Sanctities of Heav'n 60  
 Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd  
 Beatitude past utterance ; on his right  
 The radiant image of his glory sat,  
 His only Son ; on earth he first beheld  
 Our two first parents, yet the only two 65  
 Of mankind, in the happy garden plac'd,  
 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,

Uninterrupted joy, unrivall'd love,  
 In blissful solitude ; he then survey'd  
 Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there, 70  
 Coasting the wall of Heav'n on this side Night  
 In the dun air sublime, and ready now  
 To stoop, with wearied wings and willing feet,  
 On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd  
 Firm land embosom'd, without firmament 75  
 Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.  
 Him God beholding from his prospect high,  
 Wherein past, present, future he beholds,  
 Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake.  
 " Only-begotten Son, seest thou what rage 80  
 Transports our Adversary, whom no bounds  
 Prescrib'd, no bars of Hell, nor all the chains  
 Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss,  
 Wide interrupt, can hold ? so bent he seems  
 On desperate revenge, that shall redound 85  
 Upon his own rebellious head. And now,  
 Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way  
 Not far off Heav'n, in the precincts of light,  
 Directly tow'ards the new created world,  
 And Man there plac'd, with purpose to assay 90  
 If him by force he can destroy, or worse,  
 By some false guile pervert ; and shall pervert,  
 For Man will hearken to his glozing lies,  
 And easily transgress the sole command,  
 Sole pledge of his obedience : so will fall 95  
 He and his faithless progeny. Whose fault ?  
 Whose but his own ? Ingrate he had of me  
 All he could have ; I made him just and right,  
 Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.  
 Such I created all th' ethereal Powers 100  
 And Spirits, both them who stood and them who fail'd ;  
 Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.  
 Not free, what proof could they have giv'n sincere  
 Of true allegiance, constant faith or love,  
 Where only what they needs must do appear'd, 105  
 Not what they would ? what praise could they receive ?

What pleasurè I from such obedience paid,  
 When will and reason (reason also' is choice)  
 Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,  
 Made passive both, had serv'd necessity, 110  
 Not me? they therefore as to right belong'd,  
 So were created, nor can justly' accuse  
 Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,  
 As if predestination over-rul'd  
 Their will, dispos'd by absolute decree 115  
 Or high foreknowlege; they themselves decreed  
 Their own revolt, not I: if I foreknew,  
 Foreknowlege had no influence on their fault,  
 Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown.  
 So without least impulse or shadow' of fate, 120  
 Or ought by me immutably foreseen,  
 They trespass, authors to themselves in all  
 Both what they judge and what they choose; for so  
 I form'd them free, and free they must remain,  
 Till they intrall themselves; I else must change  
 Their nature, and revoke the high degree 125  
 Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd  
 Their freedom; they themselves ordain'd their fall.  
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell,  
 Self-tempted, self-depraved: Man falls deceiv'd 130  
 By th' other first; Man therefore shall find grace,  
 The other none. In mercy' and justice both  
 Through Heav'n and Earth, so shall my glory' excel.  
 But mercy first and last shall brightest shine."

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd  
 All Heav'n, and in the blessed Spirits elect 136  
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd:  
 Beyond compare the Son of God was seen  
 Most glorious; in him all his Father shone  
 Substantially express'd; and in his face 140  
 Divine compassion visibly appear'd,  
 Love without end, and without measure grace,  
 Which uttering thus, he to his Father spake.

"O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd  
 Thy sov'reign sentence, that Man should find grace;

For which both Heav'n and Earth shall high extol 146  
 Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound  
 Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne  
 Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest :  
 For should man finally be lost, should Man, 150  
 Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,  
 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd  
 With his own folly ? that be from thee far,  
 That far be from thee, Father, who art Judge  
 Of all things made, and judgest only right. 155  
 Or shall the Adversary thus obtain  
 His end, and frustrate thine ? shall he fulfil  
 His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought ;  
 Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,  
 Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to Hell 160  
 Draw after him the whole race of mankind,  
 By him corrupted ; or wilt thou thyself  
 Abolish thy creation, and unmake,  
 For him, what for thy glory thou hast made ?  
 So should thy goodness and thy greatness both 165  
 Be question'd and blasphem'd without defence."

To whom the great Creator thus reply'd.  
 " O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,  
 Son of my bosom, Son who art alone  
 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might, 170  
 All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all  
 As my eternal purpose hath decreed :  
 Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will,  
 Yet not of will in him, but grace in me  
 Freely vouchsaf'd ; once more I will renew 175  
 His lapsed pow'rs, though forfeit and intrall'd  
 By sin to foul exorbitant desires ;  
 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand  
 On even ground against his mortal foe,  
 By me upheld, that he may know how frail 180  
 His fall'n condition is, and to me owe  
 All his deliv'rance, and to none but me.  
 Some I have chosen of peculiar grace  
 Elect above the rest ; so is my will :

- The rest shall bear me call, and oft be warn'd 185  
 Their sinful state, and to appease betimes  
 Th' incens'd Deity, while offer'd grace  
 Invites; for I will clear their senses dark,  
 What may suffice, and soften stony hearts  
 To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. 190  
 To pray'r, repentance, and obedience due,  
 Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,  
 Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut;  
 And I will place within them as a guide  
 My umpire conscience, whom if they will hear, 195  
 Light after light well us'd they shall attain,  
 And to the end persisting, safe arrive.  
 This my long sufferance and my day of grace  
 They who neglect and scorn shall never taste;  
 But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more, 200  
 That they may stumble on, and deeper fall;  
 And none but such from mercy I exclude.  
 But yet all is not done; Man disobeying,  
 Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins  
 Against the high supremacy of Heaven, 205  
 Affecting Godhead, and so losing all,  
 To expatiate his treason hath nought left,  
 But to destruction, sacred and devote,  
 He with his whole posterity must die.  
 Die he or justice must; unless for him 210  
 Some other able, and as willing, pay  
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.  
 Say, heav'nly Powers! where shall we find such love?  
 Which of ye will be mortal to redeem  
 Man's mortal crime, the just th' unjust to save? 215  
 Dwells in all Heaven charity so dear?"
- He ask'd, but all the heav'nly quire stood mute,  
 And silence was in Heav'n: on Man's behalf  
 Patron or intercessor none appear'd;  
 Much less that durst upon his own head draw 220  
 The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set  
 And now without redemption all mankind  
 Must have been lost, adjudg'd to Death and Hell

By doom severe, had not the Son of God,  
 In whom the fulness dwells of love divine, 225  
 His dearest mediation thus renew'd.

“ Father, thy word is past ; Man shall find grace ;  
 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,  
 The speediest of thy winged messengers,  
 To visit all thy creatures, and to all 230

Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought ?  
 Happy for Man, so coming ; he her aid  
 Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost ;  
 Atouement for himself or offering meet,  
 Indebted and undone, hath none to bring. 235

Behold me then ; me for him life for life  
 I offer ; on me let thine anger fall ;  
 Account me Man ; I for his sake will leave  
 Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee  
 Freely put off, and for him lastly die 240

Well pleas'd : on me let Death wreck all his rage :  
 Under his gloomy pow'r I shall not long  
 Lie vanquish'd ; thou hast given me to possess  
 Life in myself for ever ; by thee I live,  
 Though now to Death I yield, and am his due  
 All that of me can die ; yet that debt paid, 246

Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave  
 His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul  
 For ever with corruption there to dwell ;  
 But I shall rise victorious, and subdue 250

My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil ;  
 Death his death's wounds shall then receive, and stoop  
 Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd.  
 I through the ample air in triumph high 254

Shall lead Hell captive maugre Hell, and show  
 The Pow'rs of darkness bound. Thou at the sight  
 Pleas'd, out of Heav'n shalt look down and smile,  
 While by thee rais'd I ruin all my foes,  
 Death last, and with his carcass glut the grave :  
 Then with the multitude of my redeem'd 260

Shall enter Heav'n long absent, and return,  
 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud

Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd  
 And reconcieiment ; wrath shall be no more  
 Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire." 265  
 His words here ended, but his meek aspect  
 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love  
 To mortal men, above which only shown  
 Filial obedience : as a sacrifice,  
 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 270  
 Of his great Father. Admiration seiz'd  
 All Heav'n what this might mean, and whither tend,  
 Wond'ring ; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd.  
 " O thou, in Heav'n and Earth the only peace  
 Found out for mankind under wrath ! O thou, 275  
 My sole complacence ! well thou know'st how dear  
 To me are all my works, nor man the least,  
 Though last created ; that for him I spare  
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,  
 By losing thee a while, the whole race lost. 280  
 Thou therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,  
 Their nature also to thy nature join,  
 And be thyself Man among men on earth,  
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,  
 By wondrous birth : be thou in Adam's room, 285  
 The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.  
 As in him perish all men, so in thee,  
 As from a second root, shall be restor'd  
 As many as are resto'rd, without thee none.  
 His crime makes guilty all his sons ; thy merit 290  
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce  
 Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,  
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee  
 Receive new life. So Man as is most just,  
 Shall satisfy for Man, be judg'd and die, 295  
 And dying rise, and, rising with him, raise  
 His brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.  
 So heav'nly love shall outdo hellish hate,  
 Giving to death, and dying to redeem,  
 So dearly to redeem what bellish hate 200  
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroys,

In those who, when they may, accept not grace.  
 Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume  
 Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.  
 Because thou hast, tho' thron'd in highest bliss 305  
 Equal to God, and equally enjoying  
 Godlike fruition, quitted all to save  
 A world from utter loss, and hast been found  
 By merit more than birthright Son of God,  
 Found worthiest to be so by being good, 310  
 Far more than great or high ; because in thee  
 Love hath abounded more than glory' abounds ;  
 Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt  
 With thee thy manhood also to this throne.  
 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign 315  
 Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,  
 Anointed universal king ; all power  
 I give thee ; reign for ever, and assume  
 Thy merits : under thee, as head supreme,  
 Thrones, Princedoms, Pow'rs, Dominions, I reduce ;  
 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide 321  
 In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell.  
 When thou, attended gloriously from Heav'n,  
 Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send  
 The summoning Archangels to proclaim 325  
 Thy dread tribunal, forthwith from all winds  
 The living, and forthwith the cited dead  
 Of all past ages, to the general doom  
 Shall hasten, such a peal shall rouse their sleep ;  
 Then, all thy saints assembled, thou shalt judge 330  
 Bad men and Angels ; they arraign'd shall sink  
 Beneath thy sentence ; Hell, her numbers full,  
 Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Meanwhile  
 The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
 Now Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,  
 And, after all their tribulations long, 336  
 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,  
 With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth.  
 Then thou thy regal sceptre shalt lay by,  
 For regal sceptre there no more shall need, 340

God shall be all in all. But all ye Gods  
 Adore him, who to compass all this dies ;  
 Adore the Son, and honour him as me !”

No sooner had th’ Almighty ceas’d, but all  
 The multitude of Angels, with a shout 345  
 Loud as from numbers without number, sweet  
 As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heav’n rung  
 With jubilee, and loud Hosannas fill’d  
 Th’ eternal regions : lowly reverent  
 Tow’ards either throne they bow, and to the ground 350  
 With solemn adoration down they cast  
 Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold ;  
 Immortal amarant, a flow’r which once  
 In Paradise, fast by the tree of life,  
 Began to bloom ; but soon for man’s offence 355  
 To Heaven remov’d, where first it grew, there grows,  
 And flow’rs aloft, shading the fount of life,  
 And where the riv’er of bliss thro’ midst of Heaven  
 Rolls o’er Elysian flow’rs her amber stream :  
 With these that never fade the Spi’rits elect 360  
 Bind their resplendent locks inwreath’d with beams ;  
 Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright  
 Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,  
 Impurpled with celestial roses snuil’d.  
 Then crown’d again, their golden harps they took, 365  
 Harps ever tun’d, that, glittering by their side,  
 Like quivers hung, and with preamble sweet  
 Of charming symphony they introduce  
 Their sacred song, and waken raptures high ;  
 No voice exempt, no voice but well could join 370  
 Melodious part, such concord is in Heaven.

“ Thee, Father,” first they sung, “ Omnipotent,  
 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
 Eternal King ; thee, Author of all being,  
 Fountain of light, thyself invisible 375  
 Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sitt’st  
 Thron’d inaccessible, but when thou shad’st  
 The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud,  
 Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,

Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear, 380  
 Yet dazzle Heav'n, that brightest Seraphim  
 Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes."

"Thee," next they sang, "of all creation first,  
 Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,  
 In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud  
 Made visible, th' almighty Father shines, 386

Whom else no creature can behold ; on thee  
 Impress'd th' effulgence of his glory' abides,  
 'Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit rests.  
 He Heav'n of Heav'ns, and all the Pow'rs therein,  
 By thee created, and by thee threw down 391

Th' aspiring Dominations : thou that day  
 Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,  
 Nor stop thy flaming chariot-wheels, that shook  
 Heav'n's everlasting frame. while o'er the necks 395  
 Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarray'd.

Back from pursuit thy Pow'rs with loud acclaim  
 Thee only' extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,  
 'To execute fierce vengeance on his foes.  
 Not so on Man ; him, thro' their malice fall'n, 400  
 Father of mercy' and grace, thou didst not doom

So strictly, but much more to pity' incline :  
 No sooner did thy dear and only Son  
 Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail Man  
 So strictly, but much more to pity inclin'd, 405

He, to appease thy wrath, and end the strife  
 Of mercy' and justice in thy face discern'd,  
 Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat  
 Second to thee, offer'd himself to die  
 For Man's offence. O unexampled love, 410

Love nowhere to be found less than Divine !  
 Hail, Son of God, Saviour of Men, thy name  
 Shall be the copious matter of my song  
 Henceforth, and never shall my harp thy praise  
 Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin !" 415

Thus they in Heav'n, above the starry sphere,  
 Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent,  
 Meanwhile upon the firm opacous globe

Of this round world, whose first convex divides  
 The luminous inferior orbs enclos'd 420  
 From Chaos and th' inroad of Darkness old,  
 Satan alighted walks: a globe far off  
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless continent,  
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night  
 Starless expos'd, and ever-threat'ning storms 425  
 Of Chaos blust'ring round, inclement sky;  
 Save on that side which from the wall of Heav'n,  
 Though distant far, some small reflection gains  
 Of glimmering air, less vex'd with tempest loud:  
 Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field, 430  
 As when a vulture, on Inaus bred,  
 Whose snowy ridge the roving Tartar bounds,  
 Dislodging from a region scarce of prey,  
 To gorge the flesh of lambs or yeanling kids  
 On hills where flocks are fed, flies tow'ard the springs  
 Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams; 436  
 But in his way lights on the barren plains  
 Of Sericana, where Chineses drive  
 With sails and wind their cany waggons light:  
 So, on this windy sea of land, the Fiend 440  
 Walk'd up and down alone, bent on his prey:  
 Alone, for other creature in this place,  
 Living or lifeless, to be found was none;  
 None yet; but store hereafter from the earth  
 Up hither like aerial vapours flew 445  
 Of all things transitory and vain, when sin  
 With vanity had fill'd the works of men;  
 Both all things vain, and all who in vain things  
 Built their fond hopes of glory or lasting fame,  
 Or happiness in this or th' other life; 450  
 All who have their reward on earth, the fruits  
 Of painful superstition and blind zeal,  
 Nought seeking but the praise of men, here find  
 Fit retribution, empty as their deeds;  
 All the unaccomplish'd works of Nature's hand, 455  
 Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mix'd,  
 Dissolv'd on earth, fleet hither, and in vain,

Till final dissolution, wander here,  
 Not in the neighb'ring moon, as some have dream'd ;  
 Those argent fields more likely habitants, 460  
 Translated Saints, or middle Spirits, hold,  
 Betwixt the angelical and human kind.  
 Hither, of ill-join'd sons and daughters born,  
 First from the ancient world those giants came  
 With many a vain exploit, tho' then renown'd : 465  
 The builders next of Babel on the plain  
 Of Sennaar, and still with vain design  
 New Babels, had they wherewithal, would build :  
 Others came single ; he who, to be deem'd  
 A God, leap'd fondly into Ætna flames, 470  
 Empedocles ; and he who, to enjoy  
 Plato's Elysium, leap'd into the sea,  
 Cleombrotus ; and many more too long,  
 Embryos and idiots, eremites and friars,  
 White, black, and grey, with all their trumpery. 475  
 Here pilgrims roam, that stray'd so far to seek  
 In Golgotha him dead, who lives in Heaven ;  
 And they who, to be sure of Paradise,  
 Dying put on the weeds of Dominic,  
 Or in Franciscan think to pass disguis'd ; 480  
 They pass the planets seven, and pass the fix'd,  
 And that crystalline sphere whose balance weighs  
 The trepidation talk'd, and that first mov'd :  
 And now Saint Peter at Heav'ns wicket seems  
 To wait them with his keys, and now at foot 485  
 Of Heav'ns ascent they lift their feet, when lo  
 A violent cross wind from either coast  
 Blows them transverse ten thousand leagues awry  
 Into the devious air ; then might ye see  
 Cows, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, tost  
 And flutter'd into rags, then reliques, beads, 491  
 Indulgences, dispenses, pardons, bulls,  
 The sport of winds : all these, upwhirl'd aloft,  
 Fly o'er the backside of the world far off  
 Into a Limbo large and broad, since call'd 495  
 The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown

Long after, now unpeopled, and untrod.  
 All this dark globe the Fiend found as he pass'd,  
 And long he wander'd, till at last a gleam  
 Of dawning light turn'd thither-ward in haste 500  
 His travell'd steps : far distant he descries,  
 Ascending by degress magnificent  
 Up to the wall of Heav'n, a structure high,  
 At top whereof, but far more rich, appear'd  
 The work as of a kingly palace gate, 505  
 With frontispiece of diamond and gold  
 Embellish'd ; thick with sparkling orient gems  
 The portal shone, inimitable on earth  
 By model, or by shading pencil drawn.  
 The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw 510  
 Angels ascending and descending, bands  
 Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled  
 To Padan-Aram, in the field of Luz,  
 Dreaming by night under the open sky,  
 And waking cry'd, " This is the gate of Heaven."  
 Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood 516  
 There always, but drawn up to Heav'n sometimes  
 Viewless ; and underneath a bright sea flow'd  
 Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon  
 Who after came from earth, sailing arriv'd, 620  
 Wafted by angels, or flew o'er the lake  
 Rapt in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.  
 The stairs were then let down, whether to dare  
 The Fiend by easy' ascent, or aggravate  
 His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss : 525  
 Direct against which open'd from beneath,  
 Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,  
 A passage down to th' Earth, a passage wide,  
 Wider by far than that of after-times  
 Over mount Sion, and, though that were large, 530  
 Over the Promis'd Land to God so dear,  
 By which, to visit oft those happy tribes  
 On high behests his Angels to and fro  
 Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard  
 From Paneas the fount of Jordan's flood 535

To Bœersaba, where the Holy Land  
 Borders on Egypt and th' Arabian shore ;  
 So wide the opening seem'd, where bounds were set  
 To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave.  
 Satan from hence, now on the lower stair 540  
 That scal'd by steps of gold to Heaven gate,  
 Looks down with wonder at the sudden view  
 Of all this world at once. As when a scout,  
 Through dark and desert ways with peril gone,  
 All night, at last, by break of cheerful dawn, 545  
 Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,  
 Which to his eye discovers unaware  
 The goodly prospect of some foreign land  
 First seen, or some renown'd metropolis  
 With glist'ring spires and pinnacles adorn'd 550  
 Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams :  
 Such wonder seiz'd, though after Heaven seen,  
 The spirit malign, but much more envy seiz'd  
 At sight of all this world beheld so fair. 554  
 Round he surveys (and well might where he stood  
 So high above the circling canopy  
 Of night's extended shade) from eastern point  
 Of Libra to the fleecy star that bears  
 Andromeda far off Atlantic seas  
 Beyond th' horizon ; then from pole to pole 560  
 He views in breadth, and without longer pause  
 Down right into the world's first region throws  
 His flight precipitant, and winds with ease,  
 Through the pure marble air, his oblique way  
 Amongst innumerable stars, that shone 565  
 Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other worlds ;  
 Or other worlds they seem'd, or happy isles,  
 Like those Hesperian gardens fam'd of old,  
 Fortunate fields and groves, and flow'ry vales,  
 Thrice happy isles, but who dwelt happy there 570  
 He stay'd not to enquire : above them all  
 The golden sun, in splendor likest Heaven,  
 Allur'd his eye ; thither his course he bends  
 Through the calm firmament, (but up or down,

By centre, or eccentric, hard to tell, 575  
 Or longitude) where the great luminary,  
 Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,  
 That from his lordly eye keep distance due,  
 Dispenses light from far ; they as they move  
 Their starry dance, in numbers that compute 580  
 Days, months, and years, tow'ards his all-cheering lamp  
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd  
 By his magnetic beam, that gently warms  
 The universe, and to each inward part,  
 With gentle penetration, though unseen, 585  
 Shoots invisible virtue ev'n to the deep ;  
 So wondrously was set his station bright.  
 There lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps  
 Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb,  
 Through his glaz'd optic tube, yet never saw, 590  
 The place he found beyond expression bright,  
 Compar'd with ought on earth, metal or stone ;  
 Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd  
 With radiant light, as glowing ir'on with fire ;  
 If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear ; 595  
 If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite,  
 Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone  
 In Aaron's breast-plate, and a stone besides  
 Imagin'd rather oft than elsewhere seen,  
 That stone, or like to that which here below 600  
 Philosophers in vain so long have sought,  
 In vain, though by their pow'rful art they bind  
 Volatile Hermes, and call up unbound  
 In various shapes old Proteus from the sea,  
 Drain'd through a limbec to his native form. 605  
 What wonder then if fields and regions here  
 Breathe forth elixir pure, and rivers run  
 Potable gold, when with one virtuous touch  
 Th' arch-chemic sun, so far from us remote,  
 Produces, with terrestrial humour mix'd, 610  
 Here in the dark so many precious things  
 Of colour glorious and effect so rare ?  
 Here matter new to gaze the Devil met

Undazzled ; far and wide his eye commands ;  
For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade, 615  
But all sunshine, as when his beams at noon  
Culminate from th' equator, as they now  
Shot upward still direct, whence no way round  
Shadow from body' opaque can fall ; and th' air  
No where so clear, sharpen'd his visual ray 620  
To objects distant far, whereby he soon  
Saw within ken a glorious Angel stand,  
The same whom John saw also in the sun ;  
His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid ;  
Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar 625  
Circl'd his head, nor less his locks behind  
Illustrious on his shoulders sledge with wings  
Lay waving round ; on some great charge employ'd  
He seem'd, or fix'd in cogitation deep.  
Glad was the Spi'rit impure, as now in hope 630  
To find who might direct his wand'ring flight  
To Paradise, the happy seat of Man,  
His journey's end, and our beginning woe.  
But first he casts to change his proper shape,  
Which else might work him danger or delay : 635  
And now a stripling Cherub he appears,  
Not of the prime, yet such as in his face  
Youth smil'd celestial, and to every limb  
Suitable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd :  
Under a coronet his flowing hair 640  
In curls on either cheek play'd ; wings he wore  
Of many a coloured plume sprinkled with gold,  
His habit fit for speed succinct, and held  
Before his decent steps a silver wand.  
He drew not nigh unheard ; the Angel bright, 645  
Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,  
Admonish'd by his ear, and strait was known  
Th' Archangel Uriël, one of the seven  
Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne,  
Stand ready at command, and are his eyes 650  
That run thro' all the Heav'ns, or down to th' Earth

Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,  
O'er sea and land : him Satan thus accosts.

“ Uriel, for thou of those sev'n Spi'rits that stand  
In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright, 655  
The first art wont his great authentic will  
Interpreter through highest heav'n to bring,  
Where all his sons thy embassy attend ;  
And here art likeliest by supreme decree  
Like honour to obtain, and as his eye 660  
To visit oft this new creation round ;  
Unspeakable desire to see and know  
All these his wondrous works, but chiefly Man,  
His chief delight and favour, him for whom  
All these his works so wondrous he ordain'd, 665  
Hath brought me from the quires of Cherubim  
Alone thus wand'ring. Brightest Seraph, tell  
In which of all these shining orbs hath Man  
His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,  
But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell ; 670  
That I may find him, and with secret gaze,  
Or open admiration, him behold,  
On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd  
Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd ;  
That both in him and all things, as is meet, 675  
The universal Maker, we may praise ;  
Who justly hath driven out his rebel foes  
To deepest Hell, and to repair that loss  
Created this new happy race of Men  
To serve him better : wise are all his ways.” 680  
So spake the false dissembler unperceiv'd ;  
For neither Man nor Angel can discern  
Hypocrisy, the only' evil that walks  
Invisible, except to God alone,  
By his permissive will, through Heav'n and Earth : 685  
And oft, though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps  
At wisdom's gate, and to simplicity  
Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill  
Where no ill seems ; which now for once beguil'd  
Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held 690

The sharpest sighted Spi'rit of all in Heav'n ;  
 Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,  
 In his uprightness, answer thus return'd.

“ Fair Angel, thy desire which tends to know  
 The works of God, thereby to glorify 695

The great Work-Master, leads to no excess  
 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise  
 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither  
 From thy empyreal mansion thus alone,  
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps 700

Contented with report hear only' in Heav'n ;  
 For wonderful indeed are all his works,  
 Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all  
 Had in remembrance always with delight ;  
 But what created mind can comprehend 705

Their number, or the wisdom infinite  
 That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep ?  
 I saw when at his word the formless mass,  
 This world's material mould, came to a heap :  
 Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar 710

Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd ;  
 Till at his second bidding darkness fled,  
 Light shone, and order from disorder sprung.  
 Swift to their several quarters hasted then  
 The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire ; 715

And this ethereal quintessence of Heaven  
 Flew upward, spirited with various forms,  
 That roll'd orbicular, and turn'd to stars  
 Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move ;  
 Each had his place appointed, each his course ; 720

The rest in circuit walls this universe.  
 Look downward on that globe, whose hither side  
 With light from hence, though but reflected, shines ;  
 That place is Earth, the seat of Man, that light  
 His day, which else, as th' other hemisphere, 725

Night would invade ; but there the neighb'ring moon  
 (So call that opposite fair star) her aid  
 Timely' interposes, and her monthly round  
 Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heav'n,

With borrow'd light her countenance triform 730  
Hence fills and empties to enlighten th' Earth,  
And in her pale dominion checks the night.  
That spot to which I point is Paradise,  
Adam's abode, those lofty shades his bower.  
Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires." 735

Thus said, he turn'd ; and Satan bowing low,  
As to superior Spi'rits is wont in Heaven,  
Where honour due and reverence none neglects,  
Took leave, and toward the coast of earth beneath,  
Down from th' ecliptic, sped with hop'd success,  
Throws his steep flight in many an airy wheel,  
Nor stay'd till on Niphates' top he lights.

END OF THE THIRD BOOK.

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

BOOK IV.

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

Satan now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprise which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described, overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a cormorant on the tree of life, as highest in the garden, to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse, thence gathers that the tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation, by seducing them to transgress: then leaves them a while, to know further of their state by some other means. Meanwhile Uriel, descending on a sun-beam, warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil Spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at noon by his sphere, in the shape of a good Angel, down to Paradise, discovered after by his furious gestures in the mount. Gabriel promises to find him ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest: their bower described; their evening worship. Gabriel, drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong Angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil Spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping: there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom questioned, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but, hindered by a sign from Heaven, flies out of Paradise.

# PARADISE LOST,

---

## BOOK IV.

O FOR that warning voice, which he who saw  
Th' Apocalypse heard cry in Heav'n aloud,  
Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,  
Came furious down to be reveng'd on men,  
“Woe to the inhabitants on earth !” that now, 5  
While time was, our first parents had been warn'd  
The coming of their secret foe, and scap'd,  
Haply so scap'd his mortal snare : for now  
Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,  
The tempter ere th' accuser of mankind, 10  
To wreck on innocent frail man his loss  
Of that first battle, and his flight to Hell :  
Yet not rejoicing in his speed, though bold  
Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,  
Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth, 15  
Now rolling boils in his tumultuous breast,  
And like a devilish engine back recoils  
Upon himself ; horror and doubt distract  
His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir  
The Hell within him ; for within him Hell, 20  
He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell  
One step no more than from himself can fly  
By change of place : now conscience wakes despair  
That slumber'd, wakes the bitter memory  
Of what he was, what is, and what must be 25  
Worse ; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.  
Sometimes tow'ards Eden, which now in his view  
Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixes sad ;

Sometimes tow'ards Heav'n and the full blazing sun,  
 Which now sat high in his meridian tower: 30  
 Then, much revolving, thus in sighs began.  
 " O thou, that with surpassing glory crown'd  
 Look'st from thy soie dominion like the God  
 Of this new world : at whose sight all the stars  
 Hide their diminish'd heads ; to thee I call, 35  
 But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,  
 O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams,  
 That bring to my remembrance from what state  
 I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere;  
 Till pride and worse ambition threw me down 40  
 Warring in Heav'n against Heav'n's matchless King :  
 Ah, wherefore ! he deserv'd no such return  
 From me, whom he created what I was  
 In that bright eminence, and with his good  
 Upbraided none ; nor was his service hard. 45  
 What could be less than to afford him praise,  
 The easiest recompense, and pay him thanks,  
 How due ! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,  
 And wrought but malice ; lifted up so high 49  
 I 'sdein'd subjection, and thought one step higher  
 Would set me high'est, and in a moment quit  
 The debt immense of endless gratitude,  
 So burdensome still paying, still to owe ;  
 Forgetful what from him I still receiv'd,  
 And understood not that a grateful mind 55  
 By owing owes not, but still pays, at once  
 Indebted and discharg'd : what burden then ?  
 O had his powerful destiny ordain'd  
 Me some inferior Angel, I had stood  
 Then happy ; no unbounded hope had rais'd 60  
 Ambition. Yet why not ? some other power  
 As great might have aspir'd, and me, though mean,  
 Drawn to his part ; but other Pow'rs as great  
 Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within  
 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd. 65  
 Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand ?  
 Thou hadst : whom hast thou then or what to' accuse,

But Heav'n's free love dealt equally to all ?  
 Be then his love accurs'd, since love or hate, 70  
 To me alike, it deals eternal woe.  
 Nay curs'd be thou ; since against his thy will  
 Chose freely what it now so justly rues.  
 Me miserable ; which way shall I fly  
 Infinite wrath, and infinite despair ? 75  
 Which way I fly is Hell ; myself am Hell ;  
 And in the lowest deep a lower deep,  
 Still threat'ning to devour me, opens wide,  
 To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heaven.  
 O then at last relent : is there no place 80  
 Left for repentance, none for pardon left ?  
 None left but by submission ; and that word  
 Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame  
 Among the Spi'rits beneath, whom I seduc'd  
 With other promises and other vaunts 85  
 Than to submit, boasting I could subdue  
 Th' Omnipotent. Ay me, they little know  
 How dearly I abide that boast so vain,  
 Under what torments inwardly I groan,  
 While they adore me on the throne of Hell. 90  
 With diadem and sceptre high advanc'd,  
 The lower still I fall, only supreme  
 In misery ; such joy ambition finds.  
 But say I could repent and could obtain  
 By act of graee my former state ; how soon 95  
 Would height recall high thoughts, how soon unsay  
 What feign'd submission swore ; ease would recant  
 Vows made in pain, as violent and void.  
 For never can true reconcilment grow,  
 Where wounds of deadly hate have pierc'd so deep ;  
 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse 100  
 And heavier fall : so should I purchase dear  
 Short intermission bought with double smart.  
 This knows my punisher ; therefore as far  
 From granting he, as I from begging peace :  
 All hope excluded thus, behold in stead 105  
 Of us, outcast, exil'd, his new delight,

Mankind created, and for him this world.  
 So farewell hope, and with hope farewell fear,  
 Farewell remorse : all good to me is lost ; 110  
 Evil be thou my good ; by thee at least ;  
 Divided empire with Heav'n's King I hold,  
 By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign ;  
 As Man ere long, and this new world, shall know." 114  
 Thus while he spake each passion dimm'd his face,  
 Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envy, and despair,  
 Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd  
 Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld :  
 For heav'nly minds from such distempers foul  
 Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware, 120  
 Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calm,  
 Artificer of fraud ; and was the first  
 That practis'd falsehood under saintly show,  
 Deep malice to conceal, couch'd with revenge :  
 Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive  
 Uriel once warn'd ; whose eye pursued him down 125  
 The way he went, and on th' Assyrian mount  
 Saw him disfigur'd, more than could befall  
 Spirit of happy sort : his gestures fierce  
 He mark'd and mad demeanour, then alone,  
 As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen, 130  
 So on he fares, and to the border comes  
 Of Eden, where delicious Paradise,  
 Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green,  
 As with a rural mound, the champaign head  
 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides 135  
 With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,  
 Access deny'd ; and overhead upgrew  
 Insuperable height of loftiest shade,  
 Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,  
 A sylvan scene, and, as the ranks ascend, 140  
 Shade above shade, a woody theatre  
 Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops  
 The verd'rous wall of Paradise up sprung :  
 Which to our general sire gave prospect large  
 Into his nether empire neigh'ring round. 145

And higher than that wall a circling row  
 Of goodliest trees, loaden with fairest fruit,  
 Blossoms and fruits at once of golden hue,  
 Appear'd, with gay enamel'd colours mix'd ; 149  
 On which the sun more glad impress'd his beams  
 Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow,  
 When God hath show'r'd the earth ; so lovely seem'd  
 That landscape : and of pure, now purer air  
 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires  
 Vernal delight and joy, able to drive 155  
 All sadness but despair ; now gentle gales,  
 Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense  
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole  
 Those balmy spoils. As when to them who sail  
 Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are past 160  
 Mozambic, off at sea north-east winds blow  
 Sabean odours from the spicy shore  
 Of Araby the blest ; with such delay  
 Well pleas'd they slack their course, and many a league,  
 Cheer'd with the grateful smell, old Ocean smiles :  
 So entertain'd those odorous sweets the Fiend 166  
 Who came their bane, tho' with them better pleas'd  
 Than Asmodæus with the fishy fume  
 That drove him, tho' enamour'd, from the spouse  
 Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent 170  
 From Media post to Egypt, there fast bound.

Now to th' ascent of that steep savage hill  
 Satan had journey'd on, pensive and slow ;  
 But further way found none, so thick-intwin'd,  
 As one continued brake, the undergrowth 175  
 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd  
 All path of man or beast that past that way :  
 One gate there only was, and that look'd east  
 On th' other side ; which when the Arch-felon saw,  
 Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt, 180  
 At one slight bound high overleap'd all bound  
 Of hill or highest wall, and sheer within  
 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,  
 Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,

Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve, 185  
 In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,  
 Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold ;  
 Or as a thief bent to unboard the cash  
 Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,  
 Cross-barr'd and bolted fast, fear no assault, 190  
 In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles :  
 So clomb this first grand thief into God's fold ;  
 So since into his church lewd hirelings climb.  
 Thence up he flew, and on the tree of life,  
 The middle tree and highest there that grew, 195  
 Sat like a cormorant ; yet not true life  
 Thereby regain'd, but sat devising death  
 To them who liv'd ; nor on the virtue thought  
 Of that life-giving plant, but only us'd  
 For prospect, what well us'd had been the pledge 200  
 Of immortality. So little knows  
 Any, but God alone, to value right  
 The good before him, but perverts best things  
 To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.  
 Beneath him with new wonder now he views, 205  
 To all delight of human sense expos'd,  
 In narrow room Nature's whole wealth, yea more,  
 A Heav'n on Earth : for blissful Paradise  
 Of God, the garden was, by him in th' east  
 Of Eden planted. Eden stretch'd her line 210  
 From Auran eastward to the royal towers  
 Of great Seleucia, built by Grecian kings,  
 Or where the sons of Eden long before  
 Dwelt in Telassar ; in this pleasant soil  
 His far more pleasant garden God ordain'd. 215  
 Out of the fertile ground he caus'd to grow  
 All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste ;  
 And all amid them stood the tree of life,  
 High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit  
 Of vegetable gold ; and next to life. 220  
 Our death, the tree of knowledge, grew fast by,  
 Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill.  
 Southward through Eden went a river large,

Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggy hill  
 Pass'd underneath ingulf'd ; for God had thrown  
 That mountain as his garden mould high rais'd 226  
 Upon the rapid current, which through veins  
 Of porous earth, with kindly thirst updrawn,  
 Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill  
 Water'd the garden ; thence united fell 230  
 Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,  
 Which from his darksome passage now appears,  
 And now divided into four main streams,  
 Runs diverse, waud'ring many a famous realm  
 And country, whereof he needs no account ; 235  
 But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,  
 How from their sapphire fount the crisped brooks,  
 Rolling on orient pearls and sands of gold,  
 With mazy error under pendant shades  
 Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 240  
 Flow'rs, worthy' of Paradise, which not nice Art,  
 In beds and curious knots, but Nature boon  
 Pour'd forth profuse on hill and dale and plain,  
 Both where the morning sun first warmly smote  
 The open field, and where the unpierc'd shade 245  
 Imbrown'd the noontide bow'rs. Thus was this place  
 A happy rural seat of various views ;  
 Groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm,  
 Others whose fruit, burnish'd with golden rind,  
 Hung amiable, Hesperian fables true, 250  
 If true, here only', and of delicious taste :  
 Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks  
 Grazing the tender herb, were interpos'd,  
 Or palmy hillock ; or the flow'ry lap  
 Of some irriguous valley spread her store, 255  
 Flow'rs of all hue, and without thorn the rose :  
 Another side, unbrageous grotts and caves  
 Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine  
 Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps  
 Luxuriant ; meanwhile murm'ring waters fall 260  
 Down the slope hills, dispers'd, or in a lake,  
 That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd

Her crystal mirror holds, unite their streams.  
 The birds their quire apply ; airs, vernal airs,  
 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune 265  
 The trembling leaves, while universal Pan,  
 Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance  
 Led on th' eternal spring. Not that fair field  
 Of Enna, where Proserpine gathering flowers,  
 Herself a fairer flower, by gloomy Dis 270  
 Was gather'd, which cost Ceres all that pain  
 To seek her thro' the world ; nor that sweet grove  
 Of Daphne by Orontes, and the inspir'd  
 Castalian spring, might with this Paradise  
 Of Eden strive ; nor that Nyseian isle 275  
 Girt with the river Triton, where old Cham,  
 Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Lybian Jove,  
 Hid Amalthea, and her florid son,  
 Young Bacchus, from his stepdame Rhea's eye ;  
 Nor where Abassin kings their issue guard, 280  
 Mount Amara, though this by some suppos'd  
 True Paradise, under the Ethiop line  
 By Nilus' head, enclos'd with shining rock,  
 A whole day's journey high, but wide remote  
 From this Assyrian garden, where the Fiend 285  
 Saw undelighted all delight, all kind  
 Of living creatures new to sight and strange.  
 Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,  
 Godlike erect, with native honour clad,  
 In naked majesty seem'd lords of all, 290  
 And worthy seem'd ; for in their looks divine  
 The image of their glorious Maker shone,  
 Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure,  
 (Severe, but in true filial freedom plac'd)  
 Whence true authority in men ; though both 295  
 Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd,  
 For contemplation he and valour form'd,  
 For softness she and sweet attractive grace,  
 He for God only, she for God in him.  
 His fair large front and eye sublime declar'd 300  
 Absolute rule ; and hyacinthine locks

Round from his parted forelock manly hung  
 Clust'ring, but not beneath his shoulders broad :  
 She, as a veil, down to the slender waist  
 Her unadorned golden tresses wore 305  
 Dishevell'd, but in wanton ringlets wav'd  
 As the vine curls her tendrils, which imply'd  
 Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway,  
 And by her yielded, by him best receiv'd,  
 Yielded with coy submission, modest pride, 310  
 And sweet reluctant amorous delay.  
 Nor those mysterious parts were then conceal'd ;  
 Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame  
 Of nature's works, honour dishonourable :  
 Sin-bred, how have ye troubled all mankind 315  
 With shows instead, mere shows of seeming pure,  
 And banish'd from man's life his happiest life,  
 Simplicity and spotless innocence !  
 So pass'd they naked on, nor shunn'd the sight  
 Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill : 320  
 So hand in hand they pass'd, the loveliest pair  
 That ever since in love's embraces met ;  
 Adam the goodliest man of men since born  
 His sons ; the fairest of her daughters, Eve.  
 Under a tuft of shade, that on a green 325  
 Stood whisp'ring soft, by a fresh fountain side,  
 They sat them down ; and, after no more toil  
 Of their sweet gard'ning labour than suffic'd  
 To recommend cool Zephyr, and make ease  
 More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite 330  
 More grateful, to their supper fruits they fell,  
 Nectarine fruits which the compliant boughs  
 Yielded them, sidelong as they sat recline  
 On the soft downy bank damask'd with flowers :  
 The savoury pulp they chew, and in the rind 335  
 Still as they thirsted scoop the brimming stream ;  
 Nor gentle purpose nor endearing smiles  
 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as beseems  
 Fair couple, link'd in happy nuptial league,  
 Alone as they. About them frisking play'd 540

All beasts of th' earth, since wild, and of all chase,  
 In wood or wilderness, forest or den;  
 Sporting the lion ramp'd, and in his paw  
 Dandled the kid; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,  
 Gambol'd before them; the unwieldy elephant, 345  
 To make them mirth, us'd all his might, and wreath'd  
 His lithe proboscis; close the serpent sly,  
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine  
 His braided train, and of his fatal guile  
 Gave proof unheeded; others on the grass 250  
 Couch'd, and, now fill'd with pasture, gazing sat,  
 Or bedward ruminating; for the sun  
 Declin'd was hastening now with prone career  
 To th' ocean isles, and in th' ascending scale  
 Of Heav'n the stars that usher evening rose: 355  
 When Satan, still in gaze as first he stood,  
 Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad.  
 "O Hell! what do mine eyes with grief behold?  
 Into our room of bliss thus high advanc'd  
 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 360  
 Not Spirits, yet to heav'nly Spirits bright  
 Little inferior; whom my thoughts pursue  
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines  
 In them divine resemblance, and such grace  
 The hand that form'd them on their shape hath pour'd.  
 Ah, gentle pair! ye little think how nigh 366  
 Your change approaches, when all these delights  
 Will vanish and deliver ye to woe,  
 More woe, the more your taste is now of joy;  
 Happy, but for so happy ill secur'd 370  
 Long to continue, and this high seat your Heav'n  
 Ill fenc'd for Heav'n to keep out such a foe  
 As now is enter'd; yet no purpos'd foe  
 'To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,  
 Though I unpitied: league with you I seek, 375  
 And mutual amity so strait so close,  
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me,  
 Henceforth; my dwelling haply may not please,  
 Like this fair Paradise, your sense, yet such

Accept your Maker's work ; he gave it me, 880  
 Which I as freely give ; Hell shall unfold,  
 To entertain you two, her widest gates,  
 And send forth all her kings ; there will be room,  
 Not like these narrow limits, to receive  
 Your numerous offspring ; if no better place, 385  
 Thank him who puts me loth to this revenge  
 On you who wrong'd me not, for him who wrong'd.  
 And should I at your harmless innocence  
 Melt, as I do, yet public reason just,  
 Honour and empire with revenge enlarg'd, 390  
 By conqu'ring this new world, compels me now  
 To do what else, though damn'd, I should abhor."

So spake the Fiend, and with necessity,  
 The tyrant's plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.  
 Then from his lofty stand on that high tree 935  
 Down he alights among the sportful herd  
 Of those four-footed kinds, himself now one,  
 Now other, as their shape serv'd best his end  
 Nearer to view his prey, and unesp'y'd  
 To mark what of their state he more might learn 400  
 By word or action mark'd : about them round  
 A lion now he stalks with fiery glare ;  
 Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spy'd  
 In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,  
 Strait couches close, then, rising, changes oft 405  
 His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,  
 Whence rushing he might surest seize them both  
 Grip'd in each paw : when Adam, first of men,  
 To first of women, Eve, thus moving speech,  
 Turn'd him all ear to hear new utterance flow. 410

" Sole partner, and sole part, of all these joys,  
 Dearer thyself than all ; needs must the Power  
 That made us, and for us this ample world,  
 Be infinitely good, and of his good  
 As liberal and free as infinite ; 415  
 That rais'd us from the dust and plac'd us here  
 In all this happiness, who at his hand  
 Have nothing merited, nor can perform  
 Ought whereof he hath need ; he who requires

From us no other service than to keep 420  
 This one, this easy charge, ' of all the trees  
 In Paradise that bear delicious fruit  
 So various, not to taste that only tree  
 Of knowledge, planted by the tree of life ;  
 So near grows death to life, whate'er death is, 425  
 Some dreadful thing no doubt ; for well thou know'st  
 God hath pronounc'd it death to taste that tree,  
 The only sign of our obedience left  
 Among so many signs of power and rule  
 Conferr'd upon us, and dominion giv'n 430  
 Over all other creatures that possess  
 Earth, air and sea. Then let us not think hard  
 One easy prohibition, who enjoy  
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice  
 Unlimited of manifold delights : 435  
 But let us ever praise him, and extol  
 His bounty, following our delightful task  
 To prune these growing plants, and tend these flowers,  
 Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet."

To whom thus Eve reply'd. " O thou for whom 440  
 And from whom I was form'd flesh of thy flesh,  
 And without whom am to no end, my guide  
 And head, what thou hast said is just and right.  
 For we to him indeed all praises owe,  
 And daily thanks ; I chiefly who enjoy 445  
 So far the happier lot, enjoying thee  
 Præeminent by so much odds, while thou  
 Like consort to thyself canst no where find.  
 That day I oft remember, when from sleep  
 I first awak'd, and found myself repos'd 450  
 Under a shade on flow'rs, much wond'ring where  
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.  
 Not distant far from thence a murm'ring sound  
 Of waters issued from a cave, and spread  
 Into a liquid plain, then stood unmov'd 455  
 Pure as the expanse of Heav'n ; I thither went  
 With unexperienc'd thought, and laid me down  
 On the green bank, to look into the clear  
 Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.

As I went down to look, just opposite 460.  
 A shape within the wat'ry gleam appear'd,  
 Bending to look on me : I started back,  
 It started back ; but pleas'd I soon return'd,  
 Pleas'd it return'd as soon with answ'ring looks  
 Of sympathy and love : there I had fix'd 465  
 Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,  
 Had not a voice thus warn'd me. ' What thou seest,  
 What there thou seest, fair Creature, is thyself ;  
 With thee it came and goes : but follow me,  
 And I will bring thee where no shadow stays 470  
 Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he  
 Whose image thou art ; him thou shalt enjoy,  
 Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear  
 Multitudes like thyself, and thence be call'd  
 Mother of human race.' What could I do, 475  
 But follow straight, invisibly thus led ?  
 Till I espy'd thee, fair indeed and tall,  
 Under a platan ; yet me thought less fair,  
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,  
 Than that smooth wat'ry image : back I turn'd ; 480  
 Thou following cry'dst aloud, ' Return fair Eve,  
 Whom fly'st thou ? whom thou fly'st, of him thou art,  
 His flesh, his bone ; to give thee be'ing I lent  
 Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,  
 Substantial life, to have thee by my side 485  
 Henceforth an individual solace dear ;  
 Part of my soul I seek thee, and thee claim  
 My other half.' With that thy gentle hand  
 Seiz'd mine ; I yielded, and from that time see  
 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace 490  
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair."

So spake our general mother, and with eyes  
 Of conjugal attraction, unprov'd,  
 And meek surrender, half embracing lean'd  
 On our first father ; half her swelling breast 495  
 Naked met his under the flowing gold  
 Of her loose tresses hid : he in delight  
 Both of her beauty and submissive charms  
 Smil'd with superior love, as Jupiter

On Juno smiles, when he impregns the clouds 500  
 That shed May flow'rs ; and press'd her matron lip  
 With kisses pure : aside the Devil turn'd  
 For envy, yet with jealous leer malign  
 Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plain'd.  
 "Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! thus these two 505  
 Imparadis'd in one another's arms,  
 The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill  
 Of bliss on bliss ; while I to Hell am thrust,  
 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,  
 Amongst our other torments not the least, 510  
 Still unfulfill'd, with pain of longing pines.  
 Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd  
 From their own mouths : all is not theirs it seems ;  
 One fatal tree there stands of knowledge call'd,  
 Forbidden them to taste. Knowledge forbidden ? 515  
 Suspicion , reasonless. Why should their Lord  
 Envy them that ? Can it be sin to know ?  
 Can it be death ? and do they only stand  
 By ignorance ? is that their happy state,  
 The proof of their obedience and their faith ? 520  
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build  
 Their ruin ! Hence I will excite their minds  
 With more desire to know, and to reject  
 Envious commands, invented with design  
 To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt 525  
 Equal with Gods : aspiring to be such,  
 They taste and die ; what likelier can ensue ?  
 But first with narrow search I must walk round  
 This garden, and no corner leave unspy'd ;  
 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet 530  
 Some wand'ring Spi'rit of Heav'n by fountain side,  
 Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw  
 What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,  
 Yet happy pair ; enjoy till I return,  
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed." 535  
 So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,  
 But with sly circumspection, and began,  
 Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his roam.

Meanwhile in utmost longitude, where Heaven  
 With earth and ocean meets, the setting sun 540  
 Slowly descended, and with right aspect  
 Against the eastern gate of Paradise  
 Level'd his evening rays: it was a rock  
 Of alabaster, pil'd up to the clouds,  
 Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent 545  
 Accessible from earth, one entrance high;  
 The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung  
 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.  
 Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel sat,  
 Chief of th' angelic guards, awaiting night; 550  
 About him exercis'd heroic games  
 Th' unarmed youth of Heav'n, but nigh at hand  
 Celestial armoury, shields, helms, and spears,  
 Hung high with diamond flaming, and with gold.  
 Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even 555  
 On a sun-beam, swift as a shooting star  
 In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fir'd  
 Impress the air, and shews the mariner  
 From what point of his compass to beware  
 Impetuous winds: he thus began in haste. 560  
 "Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath given  
 Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place  
 No evil thing approach or enter in.  
 This day at height of noon came to my sphere  
 A spirit, zealous, as he seem'd to know 565  
 More of th' Almighty's work, and chiefly Man,  
 God's latest image: I describ'd his way  
 Bent on all speed, and mark'd his airy gait;  
 But in the mount that lies from Eden north,  
 Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks 570  
 Alien from Heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd:  
 Mine eye pursed him still, but under shade  
 Lost sight of him. One of the banish'd crew,  
 I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise  
 New troubles; him thy care must be to find." 575  
 To whom the winged warrior thus return'd.  
 "Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,  
 Amid the sun's bright circle where thou sitt'st,

See far and wide : in at this gate none pass  
 The vigilance here plac'd, but such as come 580  
 Well known from Heav'n ; and since meridian hour  
 No creature thence : if Spi'rit of other sort,  
 So minded, have o'erleap'd these earthy bounds  
 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude  
 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar. 585

But if within the circuit of these walks,  
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom  
 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know."

So promis'd he ; and Uriel to his charge  
 Return'd on that bright beam, whose point now rais'd  
 Bore him slope downward to the sun now fall'n 591  
 Beneath th' Azores ; whether the prime orb,  
 Incredible how swift, had thither roll'd  
 Diurnal, or this less voluble earth,  
 By shorter flight to th' east, had left him there, 595  
 Arraying with reflected purple and gold  
 The clouds that on his western throne attend.

Now came still evening on, and twilight grey  
 Had in her sober livery all things clad ;  
 Silence accompanied : for beast and bird, 600

They to their grassy couch, these to their nests,  
 Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale ;  
 She all night long her amorous descant sung ;  
 Silence was pleas'd : now glow'd the firmament  
 With livid sapphires ; Hesperus, that led 605

The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon,  
 Rising in clouded majesty, at length  
 Apparent queen, unveil'd her peerless light,  
 And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.

When Adam thus to Eve. " Fair Consort, th' hour  
 Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest, 611

Mind us of like repose, since God hath set  
 Labour and rest, as day and night, to men  
 Successive ; and the timely dew of sleep  
 Now falling with soft slumb'rous weight inclines 615

Our eye-lids : other creatures all day long  
 Rove idle unemploy'd, and less need rest  
 Man hath his daily work of body or mind

Appointed, which declares his dignity,  
 And the regard of Heav'n on all his ways ; 620  
 While other animals unactive range,  
 And of their doings God takes no account.  
 To-morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east  
 With first approach of light, we must be risen,  
 And at our pleasant labour, to reform 625  
 Yon flow'ry arbours, yonder alleys green,  
 Our walk at noon with branches overgrown,  
 That mock our scant manuring, and require  
 More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth :  
 Those blossoms also and those dropping gums, 630  
 That lie bestrown, unsightly and unsmooth,  
 Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease ;  
 Meanwhile, as Nature wills, night bids us rest."

To whom thus Eve with perfect beauty' adorn'd,  
 " My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst 635  
 Unargued I obey ; so God ordains ;  
 God is thy law, thou mine : to know no more  
 Is woman's happiest knowledge and her praise.  
 With thee conversing I forget all time ;  
 All seasons and their change, all please alike. 640  
 Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,  
 With charm of earliest birds ; pleasant the sun,  
 When first on this delightful land he spreads  
 His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flower,  
 Glist'ring with dew ; fragrant the fertile earth 645  
 After soft show'rs ; and sweet the coming on  
 Of grateful evening mild ; then silent night,  
 With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,  
 And these the gems of Heav'n, her starry train :  
 But neither breath of morn, when she ascends 650  
 With charm of earliest birds ; nor rising sun  
 On this delightful land ; nor herb, fruit, flower,  
 Glist'ring with dew ; nor fragrance after showers ;  
 Nor grateful evening mild ; nor silent night  
 With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon, 655  
 Or glitt'ring starlight, without thee is sweet.  
 But wherefore all night long shine these ? for whom  
 This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes ?"

To whom our general ancestor reply'd.  
 " Daughter of God and Man, accomplish'd Eve, 660  
 These have their course to finish round the earth  
 By morrow evening, and from land to land  
 In order, though to nations yet unborn,  
 Minist'ring light prepar'd, they set and rise ;  
 Lest total darkness should by night regain 665  
 Her old possession, and extinguish life  
 In nature and all things, which these soft fires  
 Not only' enlighten, but with kindiy heat  
 Of various influence foment and warm,  
 Temper or nourish, or in part shed down 670  
 'Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow  
 On earth, made hereby apter to receive  
 Perfection from the sun's more potent ray.  
 These then, tho' unbekeld in deep of night, 674  
 Shine not in vain ; nor think, tho' men were none,  
 That Heav'n would want spectators, God want praise.  
 Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth  
 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep :  
 All these with ceaseless praise his works behold  
 Both day and night. How often from the steep 680  
 Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard  
 Celestial voices to the midnight air,  
 Sole, or responsive each to other's note,  
 Singing their great Creator? oft in bands  
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk,  
 With heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds 686  
 In full harmonic number join'd, their songs  
 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heav'n."  
 Thus talking, hand in hand alone they pass'd  
 On to their blissful bow'r ; it was a place 690  
 Chos'n by the sov'reign Planter, when he fram'd  
 All things to Man's delightful use ; the roof  
 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade  
 Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grew  
 Of firm and fragrant leaf ; on either side 695  
 Acanthus, and each odorous bushy shrub,  
 Fenc'd up the verdant wall ; each beauteous flower,  
 Iris all hues, roses, and jessamine,

Rear'd high their flourish'd heads between, and wrought  
 Mosaic ; underfoot the violet, 700  
 Crocus, and hyacinth, with rich inlay  
 Broider'd the ground, more colour'd than with stone  
 Of costliest emblem : other creature here,  
 Beast, bird, insect or worm, durst enter none ;  
 Such was their awe of Man. In shadier bower, 795  
 More sacred and sequester'd, though but feign'd,  
 Pan or Sylvanus never slept, nor nymph,  
 Nor Faunus haunted. Here in close recess,  
 With flowers, garlands, and sweet-smelling herbs,  
 Espoused Eve deck'd first her nuptial bed, 710  
 And heav'nly quires the hymenaeon sung,  
 What day the genial Angel to our sire  
 Brought her, in naked beauty more adorn'd,  
 More lovely than Pandora, whom the Gods  
 Endow'd with all their gifts, and O too like 715  
 In sad event, when to th' unwiser son  
 Of Japhet brought by Hermes, she ensnar'd  
 Mankind with her fair looks, to be aveng'd  
 On him who had stole Jove's authentic fire.

Thus at their shady lodge arriv'd, both stood,  
 Both turn'd, and under open sky ador'd  
 The God that made both sky, air, earth, and heaven,  
 Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,  
 And starry pole ; " Thou also mad'st the night,  
 Maker Omnipotent, and thou the day, 725  
 Which we in our appointed work employ'd  
 Have finish'd, happy in our mutual help  
 And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss  
 Ordain'd by thee, and this delicious place  
 For us too large, where thy abundance wants 730  
 Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground,  
 But thou hast promis'd from us two a race  
 To fill the earth, who shall with us extol  
 Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,  
 And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep." 735

This said unanimous, and other rites  
 Observing none, but adoration pure  
 Which God likes best, into their inmost bower

Handed they went ; and, eas'd the putting off  
 These troublesome disguises which we wear, 740  
 Straight side by side were laid ; nor turn'd I ween  
 Adam from his fair sponse, nor Eve the rites  
 Mysterious of connubial love refus'd :  
 Whatever hypocrites austerely talk  
 Of purity, and place, and innocence, 745  
 Defaming as impure what God declares  
 Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.  
 Our Maker bids increase ; who bids abstain  
 But our destroyer, foe to God and Man ?  
 Hail, wedded Love, mysterious law, true source 750  
 Of human offspring, sole propriety  
 In Paradise, of all things common else !  
 By thee adult'rous lust was driven from men  
 Among the bestial herds to range ; by thee,  
 Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure, 755  
 Relations dear, and all the charities  
 Of father, son, and brother, first were known.  
 Far be' it that I should write thee sin or blame,  
 Or think thee unbecoming holiest place,  
 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets, 760  
 Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc'd,  
 Present, or past, as saints and patriarchs us'd !  
 Here love his golden shafts employs, here lights  
 His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings,  
 Reigns here and revels ; not in the bought smile 765  
 Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unindear'd,  
 Casual fruition ; nor in court amours,  
 Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,  
 Or serenade, which the starv'd lover sings  
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain. 770  
 These lull'd by nightingales embracing slept,  
 And on their naked limbs the flow'ry roof  
 Show'd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on,  
 Blest pair ; and O yet happiest, if you seek  
 No happier state, and know to know no more. 775  
 Now had night measur'd with her shadowy cone  
 Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault,  
 And from their ivory port the Cherubim,

Forth issuing at th' accustom'd hour, stood arm'd  
 To their night watches in warlike parade, 780  
 When Gabriel to his next in pow'r thus spake.

“Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the south  
 With strictest watch ; these other wheel the north ;  
 Our circuit meets full west.” As flame they part,  
 Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear. 785  
 From these, two strong and subtle Spi'rits he call'd  
 That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

“Ithuriel and Zephon, with wing'd speed  
 Search thro' this garden, leave unsearch'd no nook ;  
 But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge,  
 Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harm. 791  
 This evening from the sun's decline arriv'd  
 Who tells of some infernal Spirit seen  
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought ?) escap'd  
 The bars of Hell, on errand had no doubt : 795  
 Such where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.”

So saying, on he led his radiant files,  
 Dazzling the moon ; these to the bower direct  
 In search of whom they sought : him there they found  
 Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve, 800  
 Assaying by his devilish art to reach  
 The organs of her fancy', and with them forge  
 Illusions as he list, phantasms and dreams ;  
 Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint  
 Th' animal spirits that from pure blood arise 805  
 Like gentle breaths from rivers pure, thence raise  
 At least distemper'd, discontented thoughts,  
 Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires,  
 Blown up with high conceits ingend'ring pride.  
 Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear 810  
 Touch'd lightly ; for no falsehood can endure  
 Touch of celestial temper, but returns  
 Of force to its own likeness : up he starts  
 Discover'd and surpris'd. As when a spark  
 Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid 815  
 Fit for the tun, some magazine to store  
 Against a rumour'd war, the smutty grain  
 With sudden blaze diffus'd inflames the air :

So started up in his own shape the Fiend,

Back stept those two fair Angels, half amaz'd 820

So sudden to behold the grisly king ;

Yet thus, unmov'd with fear accost him soon.

“ Which of those rebel Spi'rits adjudg'd to Hell

Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison? and transform'd,

Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait, 825

Here watching at the head of these that sleep?”

“ Know ye not then,” said Satan fill'd with scorn,

“ Know ye not me? ye knew me once no mate

For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar :

Not to know me argues yourselves unknown, 830

The lowest of your throng ; or, if ye know,

Why ask ye, and superfluous begin

Your message, like to end as much in vain ?”

To whom thus Zephon, answ'ring scorn with scorn.

“ Think not, revolted Spi'rit, thy shape the same, 835

Or undiminish'd brightness to be known

As when thou stood'st in Heav'n upright and pure ;

That glory then, when thou no more wast good,

Departed from thee' ; and thou resemblest now

Thy sin and place of doom, obscure and foul. 840

But come, for thou, be sure, shalt give account

To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep

This place inviolable, and these from harm.”

So spake the Cherub ; and his grave rebuke,

Severe in youthful beauty, added grace 845

Invincible : abash'd the Devil stood,

And felt how awful goodness is, and saw

Virtue' in her shape how lovely ; saw, and pin'd

His loss ; but chiefly to find her observ'd

His lustre visibly impair'd ; yet seem'd 850

Undaunted. “ If I must contend,” said he,

“ Best with the best, the sender not the sent,

Or all at once ; more glory will be won,

Or less be lost.” “ Thy fear,” said Zephon bold,

“ Will save us' trial what the least can do 855

Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.”

The Fiend reply'd not, overcome with rage ;

But, like a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on,

Champing his iron curb ; to strive or fly  
 He held it vain ; awe from above had quell'd 860  
 His heart, not else dismay'd. Now drew they nigh  
 The western point, where those half-rounding guards  
 Just met, and closing stood in squadron join'd  
 Awaiting next command. To whom their chief  
 Gabriël from the front thus call'd aloud. 865

“ O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet  
 Hasting this way, and now by glimpse discern  
 Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade,  
 And with them comes a third of regal port,  
 But faded splendour wan ; who, by his gait 870  
 And fierce demeanour, seems the prince of Hell,  
 Not likely to part hence without contest ;  
 Stand firm, for in his look defiance low'rs.”

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd,  
 And brief related whom they brought, where found, 875  
 How busied, in what form and posture couch'd.

To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake.  
 “ Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescrib'd  
 To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge  
 Of others, who approve not to transgress 880

By thy example, but have pow'r and right  
 To question thy bold entrance on this place ;  
 Employ'd it seems to violate sleep, and those  
 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss ?”

To whom thus Satan with contemptuous brow. 885

“ Gabriel, thou hadst in Heav'n th' esteem of wise,  
 And such I held thee ; but this question ask'd  
 Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain ?  
 Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,  
 Tho' thither doom'd ? thou wouldst thyself, no doubt,  
 And boldly venture to whatever place 391

Farthest from pain, where thou might'st hope to change  
 Torment with ease, and soonest recompense  
 Dole with delight, which in this place I sought ;  
 To thee no reason, who know'st only good, 895

But evil hast not try'd ; and wilt object  
 His will who bound us ? let him surer bar  
 His iron gates, if he intends our stay

In that dark durance : thus much what was ask'd.  
 The rest is true, they found me where they say ;  
 But that implies not violence or harm." 901

Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel mov'd,  
 Disdainfully, half-smiling, thus reply'd.  
 " O loss of one in Heav'n to judge of wise,  
 Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew, 905

And now returns him from his prison scap'd,  
 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise,  
 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither,  
 Unlicens'd, from his bounds in Hell prescrib'd ;  
 So wise he judges it to fly from pain 910

However, and to scape his punishment.  
 So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrath,  
 Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight  
 Sev'nfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,  
 Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain 915  
 Can equal anger infinite provok'd.

But wherefore thou alone ? wherefore with thee  
 Came not all Hell broke loose ? is pain to them  
 Less pain, less to be fled ? or thou than they  
 Less hardy to endure ? Courageous Chief, 920  
 The first in flight from pain, hadst thou alleg'd  
 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,  
 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive."

To which the Fiend thus answer'd, frowning stern.  
 " Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain, 925

Insulting Angel : well thou know'st I stood  
 Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid  
 The blasting vullied thunder made all speed,  
 And seconded thy else not dreaded spear.

But stil' thy words at random, as before, 930  
 Argue thy inexperience what behoves,  
 From hard assays and ill successes past,  
 A faithful leader, not to hazard all

Through ways of danger by himself untry'd :  
 I therefore, I alone first undertook 935

To wing the desolate abyss, and spy  
 This new-created world, whereof in Hell  
 Fame is not silent, here in hope to find

Better abode and my afflicted Powers  
 To settle here on earth, or in mid-air ; 940  
 Though for possession put to try once more  
 What thou and thy gay legions dare against ;  
 Whose easier business were to serve their Lord  
 High up in Heav'n, with songs to hymn his throne,  
 And practis'd distances, to cringe, no t'ight." 945  
 To whom the warrior Angel soon reply'd.  
 " To say and straight unsay, pretending first  
 Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,  
 Argues no leader but a liar trac'd,  
 Satan, and couldst thou faithful add ? O name, 950  
 O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd !  
 Faithful to whom ? to thy rebellious crew ?  
 Army of Fiends, fit body to fit head.  
 Was this your discipline and faith engag'd,  
 Your military obedience, to dissolve 955  
 Allegiance to th' acknowledg'd Pow'r supreme ?  
 And thou, sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem  
 Patron of liberty, who more than thou  
 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilely ador'd  
 Heav'n's awful Monarch ? wherefore, but in hope 960  
 To dispossess him, and thyself to reign ;  
 But mark what I arreed thee now—Avaunt :  
 Fly thither whence thou fledst ; if from this hour  
 Within these hallow'd limits thou appear,  
 Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chain'd, 965  
 And seal thee so, as henceforth not to scorn  
 The facile gates of Hell too slightly barr'd."  
 So threaten'd he ; but Satan to no threats  
 Gave heed, but, waxing more in rage, reply'd.  
 " Then when I am thy captive talk of chains,  
 Proud liminary Cherub, but ere then 971  
 Far heavier load thyself expect to feel  
 From my prevailing arm, though Heav'n's King  
 Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,  
 Us'd to the yoke, draw'st his triumphant wheels 975  
 In progress thro' the road of Heav'n star-pav'd."  
 Whilſt thus he spake, th' angelic squadron bright  
 Turnd fiery red, sharp'ning in moov'd horns

Their phalanx, and began to hem him round  
 With ported spears, as thick as when a field 980  
 Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends  
 Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind  
 Sways them; the careful ploughman doubting stands,  
 Lest on the threshing-floor his hopeful sheaves  
 Prove chaff. On th' other side Satan alarm'd, 985  
 Collecting all his might, dilated stood,  
 Like Teneriff or Atlas unremov'd:  
 His stature reach'd the sky, and on his crest  
 Sat horror plum'd; nor wanted in his grasp  
 What seem'd both spear and shield. Now dreadful deeds  
 Might have ensued, nor only Paradise 991  
 In this commotion, but the starry cope  
 Of Heav'n perhaps, or all the elements,  
 At least had gone to wrack, disturb'd and torn  
 With violence of this conflict; had not soon 995  
 Th' Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,  
 Hung forth in Heav'n his golden scales, yet seen  
 Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion sign,  
 Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,  
 The pendulous round earth with balanc'd air 1000  
 In counterpoise, now ponders all events,  
 Battles and realms: in these he put two weights,  
 The sequel each of parting and of fight:  
 The latter quick up flew, and kick'd the beam;  
 Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the Fiend. 1005  
 "Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know'st mine,  
 Neither our own but given; what folly then  
 To boast what arms can do? since thine no more  
 Than Heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubled now  
 To trample thee as mire: for proof look up, 1010  
 And read thy lot in yon celestial sign,  
 Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how weak,  
 If thou resist." The Fiend look'd up, and knew  
 His mounted scale aloft: nor more; but fled 1014  
 Murm'ring and with him fled the shades of night.

END OF THE FOURTH BOOK.

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

BOOK V.

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

Morning approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream ; he likes it not, yet comforts her. They come forth to their day-labours : their morning hymn at the door of their bower. God, to render man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience ; of his free estate ; of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy ; and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise ; his appearance described ; his coming discerned by Adam afar off sitting at the door of his bower : he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve ; their discourse at table. Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy ; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in Heaven, and the occasion thereof ; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel, a Seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

# PARADISE LOST.

---

---

## BOOK V.

Now morn her rosy steps in th' eastern clime  
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,  
When Adam wak'd, so custom'd, for his sleep  
Was airy light from pure digestion bred,  
And temp'rate vapours bland, which th' only sound 5  
Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,  
Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill matin song  
Of birds on ev'ry bough ; so much the more  
His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve  
With tresses discompos'd, and glowing cheek, 10  
As through unquiet rest : he on his side  
Leaning half raised, with looks of cordial love,  
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld  
Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,  
Shot forth peculiar graces ; then, with voice 15  
Mild' as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,  
Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus. " Awake,  
My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,  
Heav'n's last best gift, my ever new delight,  
Awake ; the morning shines, and the fresh field 20  
Calls us ; we lose the prime, to mark how spring  
Our tender plants, how blows the citron grove,  
What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,  
How nature paints her colours, how the bee  
Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet." 25

Such whisp'ring wak'd her, but with startled eye  
On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake.

“ O sole, in whom my thoughts find all repose;  
My glory, my perfection, glad I see  
'Thy face, and morn return'd ; for I this night 30  
(Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,  
If dream'd, not as I oft am wont, of thee,  
Works of day past, or morrow's next design,  
But of offence and trouble, which my mind  
Knew never till this irksome night. Methought  
Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk 36  
With gentle voice, I thought it thine ; it said,  
Why sleep'st thou Eve ? now is the pleasant time,  
The cool, the silent, save where silence yields  
To the night-warbling bird, that now awake 40  
'Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song ; now reigns  
Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light  
Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,  
If none regard ; Heav'n wakes with all his eyes,  
Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire ? 45  
In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment  
Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.  
I rose as at thy call, but found thee not :  
To find thee I directed then my walk ;  
And on, methought, alone I pass'd thro' ways 50  
That brought me on a sudden to the tree  
Of interdicted knowledge : fair it seem'd,  
Much fairer to my fancy than by day ;  
And, as I wond'ring look'd, beside it stood  
One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from Heaven  
By us oft seen ; his dewy locks distill'd 56  
Ambrosia ; on that tree he also gaz'd ;  
' And O fair plant,' said he, ' with fruit surcharg'd,  
Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,  
Nor God, nor Man ? is knowledge so despis'd, 60  
Or envy, or what reserve, forbids to taste ?  
Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold  
Longer thy offer'd good, why else set here ?'  
This said, he paus'd not, but with vent'rous arm

He pluck'd, he tasted ; me damp horror chill'd 65  
 At such bold words, vouch'd with a deed so bold :  
 But he thus overjoy'd. ' O fruit divine,  
 Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus cropt,  
 Forbidden here, it seems as only fit  
 For Gods, yet able to make Gods of Men : 70  
 And why not Gods of Men, since good, the more  
 Communicated, more abundant grows,  
 The Author not impair'd, but honour'd more ?  
 Here happy creature, fair Angelic Eve,  
 Partake thou also ; happy though thou art, 75  
 Happier thou may'st be, worthier canst not be :  
 Take this, and be henceforth among the Gods,  
 Thyself a goddess, not to earth confin'd,  
 But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes  
 Ascend to Heav'n, by merit thine, and see 80  
 What life the God's live there, and such live thou.'  
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,  
 Ev'n to my mouth of that same fruit held part  
 Which he had pluck'd ; the pleasant savoury smell  
 So quicken'd appetite. that I, methought, 85  
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds  
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld  
 The earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide  
 And various : wond'ring at my flight and change  
 To this high exaltation ; suddenly 90  
 My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,  
 And fell asleep ; but O how glad I wak'd  
 To find this but a dream !" Thus Eve her night  
 Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad.  
 " Best image of myself and dearer half, 95  
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep  
 Affects me equally ; nor can I like  
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear ;  
 Yet evil whence ? in thee can harbour none,  
 Created pure. But know that in the soul 100  
 Are many lesser faculties, that serve  
 Reason as chief ; among these fancy next  
 Her office holds ; of all external things,

Which the five watchful senses represent,  
 She forms imaginations, airy shapes, 105  
 Which reason, joining or disjoining, frames  
 All what we' affirm or what deny, and call  
 Our knowledge or opinion; then retires  
 Into her private cell when nature rests.  
 Oft in her absence mimic fancy wakes 110  
 To imitate her; but misjoining shapes,  
 Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams,  
 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.  
 Some such resemblances methinks I find  
 Of our last evening's talk in this thy dream, 115  
 But with addition strange: yet be not sad.  
 Evil into the mind of God or Man  
 May come and go, so un approv'd, and leave  
 No spot or blame behind: which gives me hope,  
 That what in sleep thou did'st abhor to dream, 120  
 Waking thou never wilt consent to do.  
 Be not dishearten'd then, nor cloud those looks,  
 That wont to be more cheerful and serene,  
 Than when fair morning first smiles on the world;  
 And let us to our fresh employments rise 125  
 Among the groves, the fountains, and the flowers,  
 That open now their choicest bosom'd smells,  
 Reserv'd from night, and kept for thee in store."

So cheer'd he his fair spouse, and she was cheer'd,  
 But silently a gentle tear let fall 130  
 From either eye, and wip'd them with her hair;  
 Two other precious drops that ready stood,  
 Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell  
 Kiss'd, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse  
 And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended. 135

So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste.  
 But first, from under shady arbo'rous roof  
 Soon as they forth were come to open sight  
 Of day-spring, and the sun, who scarce up risen,  
 With wheels yet hovering o'er the ocean brim, 140  
 Shot parallel to th' earth his dewy ray,  
 Discovering in wide landscape all the east

Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,  
 Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began  
 Their orisons, each morning duly paid 145  
 In various style ; for neither various style  
 Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise  
 Their Maker, in fit strains pronounc'd or sung  
 Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence  
 Flow'd from their lips, in prose or numerous verse, 150  
 More tuneable than needed lute or harp  
 To add more sweetness : and they thus began.  
 " These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,  
 Almighty, thine this universal frame,  
 Thus wondrous fair ; thyself how wondrous then !  
 Unspeakable, who sitt'st above these Heav'ns 156  
 To us invisible, or dimly seen  
 In these thy lowest works ; yet these declare  
 Thy goodness beyond thought, and pow'r divine.  
 Speak, ye who best can tell, ye sons of light, 160  
 Angels ; for ye behold him, and with songs  
 And choral symphonies, day without night,  
 Circle his throne rejoicing ; ye in Heaven,  
 On earth, join all ye creatures to extol  
 Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.  
 Fairest of stars, last in the train of night, 166  
 If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
 Sure pledge of day, that crown'st the smiling morn  
 With thy bright circlet, praise him in thy sphere,  
 While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. 170  
 Thou Sun, of this great world both eye and soul,  
 Acknowledge him thy greater, sound his praise  
 In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,  
 And when high noon hast gain'd, and when thou fall'st.  
 Moon, that now meets the orient Sun, now fly'st, 175  
 With the fix'd stars, fix'd in their orb that flies,  
 And ye five other wand'ring Fires that move  
 In mystic dance, not without song, resound  
 His praise, who out of darkness call'd up light.  
 Air, and ye Elements, the eldest birth 180  
 Of nature's womb, that in quaternion run

Perpetual circle, multiform, and mix,  
 And nourish all things, let your ceaseless change  
 Vary to our great Maker still new praise.  
 Ye Mists and Exhalations, that now rise 185  
 From hill or streaming lake, dusky or grey,  
 Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,  
 In honour to the world's great anthon rise,  
 Whether to deck with clouds th' uncolour'd sky,  
 Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers, 190  
 Rising or falling, still advance his praise  
 His praise, ye Winds, that from four quarters blow,  
 Breathe soft or loud ; and wave your tops, ye Pines,  
 With every plant, in sign of worship wave.  
 Fountains, and ye that warble as ye flow, 195  
 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.  
 Join voices all, ye living Souls ; ye Birds,  
 That singing up to Heav'n gate ascend,  
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.  
 Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk 200  
 The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep,  
 Witness if I be silent; morn or even,  
 To hill or valley, fountain, or fresh shade,  
 Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.  
 Hail, universal Lord ! be bounteous still 205  
 To give us only good ; and, if the night  
 Have gather'd ought of evil or conceal'd,  
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark."  
 So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts  
 Firm peace recover'd soon and wonted calm. 210  
 On to their morning's rural work they haste  
 Among sweet dews and flow'rs ; where any row  
 Of fruit-trees over-woody reach'd too far  
 Their pamper'd boughs, and needed hands to check  
 Fruitless embraces : or they led the vine 215  
 To wed her elms : she, spous'd, about him twines  
 Her marriageable arms, and with her brings  
 Her dow'r, th' adopted clusters, to adorn  
 His barren leaves. Them thus employ'd beheld  
 With pity Heav'n's high King, and to him call'd

- Raphael, the sociable Spi'rit, that deign'd  
To travel with Tobias, and secur'd  
His marriage with the sev'ntimes-wedded maid. 221
- “ Raphael,” said he, “ thou hear'st what stir on Earth  
Satan from Hell, scap'd through the darksome gulf  
Hath rais'd in Paradise, and how disturb'd 226  
This night the human pair ; now he designs  
In them at once to ruin all mankind.  
Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend  
Converse with Adam, in what bow'r or shade 230  
Thou find'st him from the heat of noon retir'd,  
To respite his day-labour with repast,  
Or with repose ; and such discourse bring on,  
As may advise him of his happy state,  
Happiness in his pow'r left free to will, 235  
Left to his own free will, his will though free,  
Yet mutable ! whence warn him to beware  
He swerve not too secure : tell him withal  
His danger, and from whom ; what enemy,  
Late fall'n himself from Heav'n, is plotting now 240  
The fall of others from like state of bliss ;  
By violence ? no, for that shall be withstood ;  
But by deceit and lies ; this let him know,  
Lest wilfully transgressing he pretend  
Surprisal, unadmonish'd, unforewarn'd.” 245
- So spake th' eternal Father, and fulfill'd  
All justice : nor delay'd the winged Saint  
After his charge receiv'd ; but from among  
Thousand celestial ardors, where he stood 249  
Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, up springing light,  
Flew thro' the midst of Heav'n ; th' angelic quires,  
On each hand parting, to his speed gave way  
Through all the empyreal road ; till at the gate  
Of Heav'n arriv'd, the gate self-open'd wide,  
On golden hinges turning, as by work 255  
Divine the sov'reign Architect had fram'd.  
From hence no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,  
Star interpos'd, however small he sees,  
Not unconform'd to other shining globes,

Earth and the gard'n of God, with cedars crown'd  
 Above all hills. As when by night the glass 261  
 Of Galileo, less assur'd, observes  
 Imagin'd lands and regions in the moon ;  
 Or pilot, from amidst the Cyclades,  
 Delos or Samos first appearing, kens 265  
 A cloudy spot : down thither prone in flight  
 He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky  
 Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing,  
 Now on the polar winds, then with quick fan  
 Winnows the buxom air ; till, within soar 270  
 Of tow'ring eagles, to' all the fowls he seems  
 A Phoenix, gaz'd by all, as that sole bird,  
 When, to iushrine his reliques in the sun's  
 Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.  
 At once on th' eastern cliff of Paradise 275  
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns  
 A Seraph wing'd ; six wings he wore, to shade  
 His lineaments divine ; the pair that clad  
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast  
 With regal ornament ; the middle pair 280  
 Girt like a starry zone his waist and round  
 Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold  
 And colours dipt in Heav'n ; the third his feet  
 Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail,  
 Sky-tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's son he stood, 285  
 And shook his plumes, that heav'nly fragrance fill'd  
 The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands  
 Of Angels under watch ; and to his state,  
 And to his message high, in honour rise ; 239  
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound.  
 Their glittering tents he pass'd, and now is come  
 Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh,  
 And, flow'ring odours, cassia, nard, and balm ;  
 A wilderness of sweets ; for nature here  
 Wanton'd as in her prime, and play'd at will 295  
 Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,  
 Wild above rule or art ; enormous bliss.  
 Him, through the spicy forest onward come,

Adam discern'd as in the door he sat  
 Of his cool bow'r, while now the mounted sun 300  
 Shot down direct his fervid rays to warm  
 Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs :  
 And Eve within, due at her hour prepar'd  
 For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please  
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst 305  
 Of necta'rous draughts between, from milky stream,  
 Berry or grape ; to whom thus Adam call'd.

“ Haste hither, Eve, and, worth thy sight behold,  
 Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape  
 Comes this way moving ; seems another morn 310  
 Ris'n on mid-noon ; some great behest from Heaven  
 To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe  
 This day to be our guest. But go with speed,  
 And what thy stores contain bring forth, and pour  
 Abundance, fit to honour and receive 315  
 Our Heav'nly stranger : well we may afford  
 Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow  
 From large bestow'd, where Nature multiplies  
 Her fertile growth, and by disburd'ning grows  
 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare.” 320

To whom thus Eve. “ Adam, earth's hallow'd mould,  
 Of God inspir'd, small store will serve, where store,  
 All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk ;  
 Save what by frugal storing firmness gains  
 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes : 325  
 But I will haste, and from each bough and brake,  
 Each plant and juiciest gourd, will pluck such choice  
 To entertain our Angel guest, as he  
 Beholding shall confess, that here on Earth  
 God hath dispens'd his bounties as in Heav'n.” 330

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste  
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent  
 What choice to choose for delicacy best,  
 What order, so contriv'd as not to mix  
 Tastes, not well join'd, inelegant, but bring 335  
 Taste after taste upheld with kindest change ;  
 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk

Whatever Earth, all-bearing mother, yields  
 In India East or West, or middle shore  
 In Pontus or the Punic coast, or where 340  
 Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kinds, in coat  
 Rough or smooth rin'd, or bearded husk, or shell,  
 She gathers, tribute large, and on the board  
 Heaps with unsparing hand ; for drink the grape  
 She crushes, inoffensive must, and meaths 345  
 From many a berry' ; and from sweet kernels press'd  
 She tempers dulcet creams ; not these to hold  
 Wants her fit vessels pure ; then strews the ground  
 With rose and odours from the shrub unfum'd.

Meanwhile our primitive great sire, to meet 350  
 His God-like guest, walks forth, without more train  
 Accompanied than with his own complete  
 Perfections : in himself was all his state,  
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits  
 On princes, when their rich retinue long 355  
 Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold,  
 Dazzles the croud, and sets them all agape.  
 Nearer his presence Adam, though not aw'd,  
 Yet with submiss approach and reverence meek,  
 As to' a superior nature bowing low, 360  
 Thus said " Native of Heav'n, for other place  
 None can than Heav'n such glorious shape contain ;  
 Since, by descending from the thrones above,  
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while  
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us 565  
 Two' only, who yet by sov'reign gift possess  
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower  
 To rest, and what the garden choicest bears  
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat  
 Be over, and the sun more cool decline." 370

Whom thus th' angelic Virtue answer'd mild.  
 " Adam, I therefore came, nor art thou such  
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,  
 As may not oft invite, though Spi'rits of Heav'n,  
 To visit thee : lead on then where thy bower 575  
 O'ershades : for these midhours till evening rise,

I have at will." So to the sylvan lodge  
 They came, that like Pomona's arbour smil'd  
 With flow'rets deck'd and fragrant smells ; but Eve,  
 Undeck'd save with herself, more lovely fair 380  
 Than Wood-Nymph, or the fairest goddess feign'd  
 Of three that in mount Ida naked strove,  
 Stood to entertain her guest from Heav'n : no veil  
 She needed, virtue proof ; no thought infirm  
 Alter'd her cheek. On whom the Angel ' Hail' 385  
 Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd  
 Long after the blest Mary, second Eve.

" Hail, Mother of Mankind ! whose fruitful womb  
 Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons,  
 Than with these various fruits the trees of God 390  
 Have heap'd this table." Rais'd of grassy turf  
 Their table was and mossy seats had round,  
 And on her ample square from side to side  
 All autumn pil'd, though spring and autumn here  
 Danc'd hand in hand. Awhile discourse they hold  
 No fear lest dinner cool ; when thus began 396  
 Our Author. " Heav'nly stranger please to taste  
 These bounties, which our Nourisher, from whom  
 All perfect good, unmeasur'd out, descends,  
 To us for food and for delight hath caus'd 400  
 The earth to yield ; unsavoury food perhaps  
 To spiritual natures ; only this I know,  
 That one celestial Father gives to all."

To whom the Angel. " Therefore what he gives  
 (Whose praise be ever sung) to man in part 405  
 Spiritual, may of purest Spi'rits be found  
 No' ingrateful food : and food alike those pure  
 Intelligential substances require,  
 As doth your rational ; and both contain  
 Within them every lower faculty 410  
 Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,  
 Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
 And corporeal to incorporeal turn.  
 For know, whatever was created, needs  
 To be sustain'd and fed : of elements 415

The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea,  
 Earth and the sea feed air, the air those fires  
 Etherial, and, as lowest, first the moon ;  
 Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'd  
 Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd. 420  
 Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale  
 From her moist continent to higher orbs.  
 The sun, that light imparts to all, receives  
 From all his alimantal recompense  
 In humid exhalations, and at even 425  
 Sups with the ocean. Though in Heav'n the trees  
 Of life ambrosjal fruitage bear, and vines  
 Yield nectar ; tho' from off the boughs each morn  
 We brush mellifluous dews, and find the ground  
 Cover'd with pearly grain ; yet God hath here 430  
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,  
 As may compare with Heav'n ; and to taste  
 Think not I shall be nice." So down they sat,  
 And to their viands fell ; nor seemingly  
 The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss 435  
 Of Theologians, but with keen dispatch  
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heat  
 To transubstantiate: what redounds, transpires  
 Through Spi'rits with ease ; nor wonder if, by fire  
 Of sooty coal, th' empyric alchemist 440  
 Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,  
 Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold  
 As from the mine. Meanwhile at table Eve  
 Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups  
 With pleasant liquors crown'd. O innocence 445  
 Deserving Paradise ! if ever, then,  
 Then had the sons of God excuse to' have been  
 Enamour'd at that sight ; but in those hearts  
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy  
 Was understood, the injur'd lover's Hell. 450  
 Thus when with meats and drinks they had suffic'd,  
 Not burden'd nature, sudden mind arose  
 In Adam not to let th' occasion pass,  
 Giv'n him by this great conference to know

Of things above this world, and of their being 455  
 Who dwell in Heav'n, whose excellence he saw  
 Transcend his own so far, whose radiant forms  
 Divine effulgence, whose high pow'r so far  
 Exceeded human, and his wary speech  
 Thus to th' empyreal minister he fram'd. 460

“ Inhabitant with God, now know I well  
 Thy favour in this honour done to Man,  
 Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd  
 To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,  
 Food not of Angels, yet accepted so, 465  
 As that more willingly thou couldst not seem  
 At Heav'n's high feasts to' have fed: yet what compare?”

To whom the wing'd Hierarch reply'd:  
 “ O Adam, one Almighty is, from whom 470  
 All things proceed, and up to him return,  
 If not deprav'd from good, created all  
 Such to perfection, one first matter all,  
 Endued with various forms, various degrees  
 Of substance, and, in things that live, of life ;  
 But more refin'd, more spiritous, and pure, 475  
 As nearer to him plac'd, or nearer tending,  
 Each in their several active spheres assign'd,  
 Till body up to spirit work, in bounds  
 Proportion'd to each kind. So from the root  
 Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves  
 More airy, last the bright consummate flower 481  
 Spirits odorous breathes : flow'rs and their fruit,  
 Man's nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd,  
 The vital spi'rits aspire, to animal,  
 To intellectual ; give both life and sense, 485  
 Fancy and understanding ; whence the soul  
 Reason receives, and reason is her being,  
 Discursive, or intuitive ; discourse  
 Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,  
 Differing but in degree, of kind the same. 490  
 Wonder not, then, what God for you saw good  
 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,

- To proper substance : time may come when men  
 With Angels may participate, and find  
 No inconvenient di'et, nor too light fare ; 495  
 And from these corporal nutriments perhaps  
 Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,  
 Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend  
 Etherial, as we, or may at choice  
 Here or in Heav'ny Paradises dwell ; 500  
 If ye be found obedient, and retain  
 Unalterably firm his love entire,  
 Whose progeny you are. Meanwhile enjoy  
 Your fill what happiness this happy state  
 Can comprehend, incapable of more." 505
- To whom the Patriarch of mankind reply'd.  
 " O favourable Spi'rit, propitious guest,  
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct  
 Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set  
 From centre to circumference, whereon, 510  
 In contemplation of created things,  
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,  
 What meant that caution join'd, ' If ye be found  
 Obedient?' can we want obedience then  
 To him, or possibly his love desert, 515  
 Who form'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here,  
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss  
 Human desires can seek or apprehend ?"
- To whom the Angel. " Son of Heav'n and Earth,  
 Attend : That thou art happy, owe to God ; 520  
 That thou continuest such, owe to thyself,  
 That is to thy obedience ; therein stand.  
 This was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd.  
 God made thee perfect, not immutable ;  
 And good he made thee, but to persevere 525  
 He left it in thy pow'r ; ordain'd thy will  
 By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate  
 Inextricable, or strict necessity :  
 Our voluntary service he requires,  
 Not our necessitated ; such with him 530  
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find ; for how

Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve  
 Willing or no, who will but what they must  
 By destiny. and can no other choose?

Myself and all th' Angelic host, that stand 535

In sight of God enthron'd, our happy state  
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;

On other surety none ; freely we serve,

Because we freely love, as in our will

To love or not ; in this we stand or fall : 540

And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,

And so from Heav'n to deepest Hell ; O fall

From what high state of bliss into what woe !"

To whom our great progenitor. " Thy words

Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 545

Divine Instructor, I have heard, than when

Cherubic songs by night from neighb'ring hills

Aerial music send : nor knew I not

To be both will and deed created free ;

Yet that we never shall forget to love 550

Our Maker, and obey him whose command

Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts

Assur'd me', and still assure : tho' what thou tell'st

Hath pass'd in Heav'n, some doubt within me move,

But more desire to hear, if thou consent, 555

The full relation, which must needs be strange,

Worthy of sacred silence to be heard ;

And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun

Hath finish'd half his journey', and scarce begins

His other half in the great zone of Heav'n." 560

Thus Adam made request ; and Raphaël,

After short pause assenting, thus began.

" High matter thou enjoin'st me, O prime of men,

Sad task and hard ; for how shall I relate

To human sense th' invisible exploits 565

Of warring Spirits ? how, without remorse,

The ruin of so many glorious once,

And perfect while they stood ? how, last, unfold

The secrets of another world, perhaps

Not lawful to reveal ? yet for thy good 570

This is dispens'd ; and what surmounts the reach  
 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,  
 By likening spiritual to corporal forms,  
 As may express them best : tho' what if Earth 574  
 Be but the shadow' of Heav'n, and things therein,  
 Each to' other like, more than on Earth is thought ?

“ As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild  
 Reign'd where these heav'n's now roll, where Earth  
 new rests

Upon her centre pois'd ; when, on a day,  
 (For time, though in eternity, apply'd 580  
 To motion, measures all things durable

By present, past, and future) on such day  
 As Heav'n's great year brings forth, th' empyreal host  
 Of Angels, by imperial summons call'd,  
 Innumerable before th' Almighty's throne 585

Forthwith from all the ends of Heav'n appear'd  
 Under their Hierarchs in orders bright  
 Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanc'd,  
 Standards and gonfalon's 'twixt van and rear,  
 Stream in the air, and for distinction serve 590

Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees ;  
 Or in their glittering tissues bear emblaz'd  
 Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love  
 Recorded eminent. Thus, when in orbs  
 Of circuit inexpressible they stood, 595

Orb within orb, the Father infinite,  
 By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,  
 Amidst, as from a flaming mount, whose top  
 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

“ Hear, all ye Angels, progeny of light, 600  
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
 Hear my decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.

This day I have begot whom I declare  
 My only Son, and on this holy hill  
 Him have anointed, whom ye now behold 605

At my right hand ; your head I him appoint ;  
 And by myself have sworn to him shall bow  
 All knees in Heav'n and shall confess him Lord :

Under his great vicegerent reign abide  
 United as one individual soul, 610  
 For ever happy. Him who disobeys,  
 Me disobeys, breaks union, and that day,  
 Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls  
 Into' utter darkness, deep engulf'd, his place  
 Ordain'd, without redemption, without end.' 615  
 " So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words  
 All seem'd well pleas'd ; all seem'd, but were not all.  
 That day, as other solemn days, they spent  
 In song and dance about the sacred hill ;  
 Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere 620  
 Of planets and of fix'd in all her wheels  
 Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,  
 Eccentric, intervolv'd yet regular  
 Then most, when most irregular they seem ;  
 And in their motions harmony divine 625  
 So smoothes her charming tones, that God's own ear  
 Listens delighted. Evening now approach'd  
 (For we have also our evening and our morn,  
 We ours for change delectable, not need :)  
 Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn 630  
 Desirous : all in circles as they stood,  
 Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd  
 With Angels' food, and rubied nectar flows  
 In pearl in diamond, and massy gold,  
 Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of Heaven. 635  
 On flow'rs repos'd, and with fresh flowrets crown'd,  
 They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet  
 Quaff immortality and joy, secure  
 Of surfeit where full measure only bounds  
 Excess, before th' all-bounteous King, who show'r'd  
 With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy. 641  
 Now, when ambrosial night with clouds exhal'd  
 From that high mount of God, whence light and shade  
 Spring both, the face of brightest Heav'n had chang'd  
 To grateful twilight (for night comes not there 645  
 In darker veil) and roseate dews dispos'd  
 All but th' unsleeping eyes of God to rest :

Wide over all the plain, and wider far  
 Than all this globous earth in plain outspread,  
 (Such are the courts of God) th' angelic throng, 650  
 Dispers'd in bands and files, their camp extend  
 By living streams among the trees of life,  
 Pavilions numberless, and sudden rear'd,  
 Celestial tabernacles, where they slept  
 Fann'd with cool winds, save those who in their course  
 Melodious hymns about the sov'reign throne 656  
 Alternate all night long: but not so wak'd  
 Satan (so call him now, his former name  
 Is heard no more in Heav'n;) he of the first,  
 If not the first Archangel, great in power, 660  
 In favour and præeminence, yet fraught  
 With envy' against the Son of God, that day  
 Honour'd by his great Father, and proclaim'd  
 Messiah King anointed, could not bear, 664  
 Thro' pride, that sight, and thought himself impair'd.  
 Deep malice thence conceiving, and disdain,  
 Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour  
 Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd  
 With all his legions to dislodge, and leave  
 Unworshipp'd, unobey'd the throne supreme, 670  
 Contemptuous, and his next subordinate  
 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

" " Sleep'st thou, companion dear; what sleep can  
 close

Thy eye-lids? and remember'st what decree  
 Of yesterday, so late hath pass'd the lips 675  
 Of Heav'n's Almighty. Thou to me thy thoughts  
 Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to' impart;  
 Both waking we were one; how then can now  
 Thy sleep dissent? New laws thou seest impos'  
 New laws from him who reigns, new minds may raise  
 In us who serve, new counsels, to debate 681  
 What doubtful may ensue: more in this place  
 To utter is not safe. Assemble thou  
 Of all those myriads which we lead the chief;  
 Tell them that by command, ere yet dim night 685

Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,  
 And all who under me their banners wave,  
 Homeward with flying march where we possess  
 The quarters of the north ; there to prepare  
 Fit entertainment to receive our King 690  
 The great Messiah, and his new commands,  
 Who speedily through all the hierarchies  
 Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.'

“ So spake the false Archangel, and infus'd  
 Bad influence into th' unwary breast 695  
 Of his associate : he together calls  
 Or several one by one, the regent Powers,  
 Under him regent ; tells, as he was taught,  
 That, the most High commanding, now ere night,  
 Now ere dim night had disincumber'd Heav'n, 700  
 The great hierarchal standard was to move ;  
 Tells the suggested cause, and casts between  
 Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound  
 Or taint integrity. But all obey'd

The wonted signal, and superior voice 705  
 Of their great potentate ; for great indeed  
 His name, and high was his degree in Heaven :  
 His count'nance, as the morning star that guides  
 The starry flock, allur'd them, and with lies  
 Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's host. 710

Meanwhile th' eternal eye, whose sight discerns  
 Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy mount,  
 And from within the golden lamps that burn  
 Nightly before him, saw without their light  
 Rebellion rising, saw in whom, how spread 715  
 Among the sons of morn, what multitudes  
 Were banded to oppose his high decree ;  
 And, smiling, to his only Son thus said.

“ Son, thou in whom my glory I behold  
 In full resplendence, Heir of all my might, 720  
 Nearly it now concerns us to be sure  
 Of our omnipotence, and with what arms  
 We mean to hold what anciently we claim  
 Of deity or empire ; such a foe

Is rising, who intends to' erect his throne 725  
 Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north:  
 Nor so content, hath in his thought to try,  
 In battle, what our pow'r is, or our right.  
 Let us advise, and to this hazard draw  
 With speed what force is left, and all employ 730  
 In our defence, lest unawares we lose  
 This our high place, our sanctuary, our hill.  
 " To whom the Son, with calm aspect and clear,  
 Lightning divine, ineffable, serene,  
 Made answer. ' Mighty Father, thou thy foes 735  
 Justly hast in derision, and, secure,  
 Laugh'st at their vain designs and tumults vain,  
 Matter to me of glory, whom their hate  
 Illustrates, when they see all regal power  
 Giv'n me to quell their pride, and in event 740  
 Know whether I be dext'rous to subdue  
 The rebels, or be found the worst in Heav'n.'  
 " So spake the Son ; but Satan with his Powers  
 Far was advanc'd on winged speed, an host 745  
 Innumerable as the stars of night,  
 Or stars of morning, dew-drops, which the sun  
 Impearls on every leaf and every flower.  
 Regions they pass'd, the mighty regencies  
 Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and Thrones,  
 In their triple degrees ; regions to which 750  
 All thy dominion, Adam, is no more  
 Than what this garden is to all the earth,  
 And all the sea, from one entire globose  
 Stretch'd into longitude ; which, having pass'd  
 At length into the limits of the north 755  
 They came, and Satan to his royal seat  
 High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount  
 Rais'd on a mount, with pyramids and towers  
 From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold ;  
 The palace of great Lucifer (so call 760  
 That structure in the dialect of men  
 Interpreted,) which not long after he,  
 Affecting all equality with God,

In imitation of that mount whereon  
 Messiah was declar'd in sight of Heaven, 765  
 The mountain of the congregation call'd ;  
 For thither he assembled all his train,  
 Pretending so commanded, to consult  
 About the great reception of their king  
 Thither to come, and with calumnious art 770  
 Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears.  
 " Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
 If these magnificent titles yet remain  
 Not merely titular, since by decree  
 Another now hath to himself engross'd 775  
 All pow'r, and us eclips'd, under the name  
 Of King anointed, for whom all this haste  
 Of midnight march, and hurried meeting here ;  
 This only to consult how we may best,  
 With what may be devis'd of honours new, 780  
 Receive him coming, to receive from us  
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,  
 Too much to one, but double how endur'd,  
 To one and to his image now proclaim'd ?  
 But what if better counsels might erect 785  
 Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke ?  
 Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend  
 The supple knee ? Ye will not, if I trust  
 To know ye right, or if ye know yourselves  
 Natives and sons of Heaven, possess'd before 790  
 By none, and if not equal all, yet free,  
 Equally free ; for orders and degrees  
 Jar not with liberty, but well consist.  
 Who can in reason then, or right assume  
 Monarchy over such as live by right 795  
 His equals; if in pow'r and splendour less,  
 In freedom equal ? or can introduce  
 Law and edict on us, who without law  
 Err not ? much less for this to be our Lord,  
 And look for adoration; to th' abuse 800  
 Of those imperial titles, which assert  
 Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve.

" Thus far his bold discourse without control  
 Had audience ; when among the Seraphim  
 Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal ador'd 805  
 The Deity, and divine commands obey'd,  
 Stood up, and, in a flame of zeal severe,  
 The current of his fury thus oppos'd.  
 " " O argument blasphemous, false and proud !  
 Words which no ear ever to hear in Heaven 810  
 Expected, least of all from thee, Ingrate,  
 In place thyself so high above thy peers.  
 Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn  
 The just decree of God, pronounc'd and sworn,  
 That to his only Son, by right endued 315  
 With regal sceptre, ev'ry soul in Heav'n  
 Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due  
 Confess him rightful King ? Unjust thou, say'st,  
 Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free  
 And equal over equals to let reign, 820  
 One over all with unsucceeded power.  
 Shalt thou give law to God, shalt thou dispute  
 With him the points of liberty, who made  
 Thee what thou art, and form'd the Pow'rs of Heaven  
 Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their being ? 825  
 Yet, by experience taught, we know how good,  
 And of our good and of our dignity  
 How provident, he is, how far from thought  
 To make us less, bent rather to exalt  
 Our happy state under one head more near 830  
 United. But to grant it thee unjust,  
 That equal over equals monarch reign :  
 Thyself, thou great and glorious, dost thou count,  
 Or all angelic nature join'd in one,  
 Equal to him, begotten Son ? by whom, 835  
 As by his Word the mighty father made  
 All things, even thee ; and all the Spi'rits of Heaven  
 By him created in their bright degrees,  
 Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory nam'd  
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
 Essential Pow'rs ; nor by his reign obscur'd, 841  
 But more illustrious made ; since he, the head,

One of our number thus reduc'd becomes ;  
 His laws our laws ; all honour to him done  
 Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage,  
 And tempt not these ; but hasten to appease 846  
 Th' incens'd Father and th' incens'd Son,  
 While pardon may be found, in time besought.'  
 " So spake the fervent Angel ; but his zeal  
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd, 850  
 Or singular and rash ; whereat rejoic'd  
 Th' Apostate, and more haughty thus reply'd.  
 ' That we were form'd, then say'st thou ? and the work  
 Of secondary hands, by task transferr'd  
 From Father to his Son ? Strange point and new !  
 Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd. Who saw  
 When this creation was ? remember'st thou 851  
 Thy making, while the maker gave thee being ?  
 We know no time when we were not as now ;  
 Know none before us, self-begot, self-rais'd 810  
 By our own quick'ning pow'r, when fatal course  
 Had circled his full orb, the birth mature  
 Of this our native Heav'n, ethereal sons.  
 Our puissance is our own ; our own right hand  
 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try 865  
 Who is our equal : then thou shalt behold  
 Whether by supplication we intend  
 Address, and to begirt th' Almighty throne  
 Beseeching or besieging. This report,  
 These tidings, carry to th' anointed King : 870  
 And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.'  
 " He said, and, as the sound of waters deep,  
 Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause,  
 Through the infinite host ; nor less for that  
 The flaming Seraph, fearless, though alone 875  
 Encompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.  
 " ' O alienate from God, O Spi'rit accurs'd,  
 Forsaken of all good ; I see thy fall  
 Determin'd, and thy hapless crew involv'd  
 In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread 880

Both of thy crime and punishment : henceforth  
 No more be troubled how to quit the yoke  
 Of God's Messiah ; those indulgent laws  
 Will not be now vouchsaf'd : other decrees  
 Against thee are gone forth without recall ; 885  
 That golden sceptre, which thou didst reject,  
 Is now an iron rod to bruise and break  
 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise ;  
 Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly  
 These wicked tents devoted, lest the wrath 890  
 Impendent, raging into sudden flame,  
 Distinguish not : for soon expect to feel  
 His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.  
 Then who created thee lamenting learn,  
 When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know ;  
 " So spake the Seraph Abdiel, faithful found 896  
 Among the faithless, faithful only he ;  
 Among innumerable false, unmov'd,  
 Unshaken, uneduc'd, unterrify'd,  
 His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal ; 900  
 Nor number, nor example with him wrought  
 To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind,  
 Tho' single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,  
 Long way thro' hostile scorn which he sustain'd  
 Superior, nor of violence fear'd ought ; 905  
 And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd  
 On those proud tow'rs to swift destruction doom'd."

END OF THE FIFTH BOOK.

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

**BOOK VI.**

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his Angels. The first fight described. Satan and his Powers retire under night. He calls a council, invents devilish engines, which in the second day's fight put Michael and his Angels to some disorder; but they at length, pulling up mountains, overwhelmed both the force and machines of Satan. Yet the tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserv'd the glory of that victory. He, in the Power of his Father, coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them, unable to resist, towards the wall of Heaven; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep. Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK VI.

“ALL night the dreadless Angel, unpursued,  
Through Heav'n's wide champaign held his way ; till  
morn,  
Wak'd by the circling hours, with rosy hand  
Unbarr'd the gates of light. There is a cave  
Within the mount of God, fast by his throne, 5  
Where light and darkness in perpetual round  
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through  
Heaven  
Grateful vicissitude, like day and night ;  
Light issues forth, and at the other door  
Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour 10  
To veil the Heav'n tho' darkness there might well  
Seem twilight here ; and now went forth the morn,  
Such as in highest Heav'n, array'd in gold  
Empyrean ; from before her vanish'd night,  
Shot thro' with orient beams ; when all the plain,  
Cover'd with thick embattled squadrons bright, 16  
Chariots and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,  
Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view.  
War he perceiv'd, war in procinct, and found,  
Already known, what he for news had thought 20  
To have reported : gladly then he mix'd  
Among those friendly Pow'rs, who him receiv'd  
With joy and acclamations loud, that one,  
That of so many myriads, fall'n, yet one  
Return'd not lost. On to the sacred hill 25  
They led him high applauded, and present

Before the seat supreme ; from whence a voice  
From midst a golden cloud thus mild was heard.

““ Servant of God, well done, well hast thou fought  
The better fight, who single hast maintain'd 30  
Against revolted multitudes the cause  
Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms ;  
And for the testimony' of truth hast borne  
Universal reproach, far worse to bear  
Than violence ; for this was all thy care 35  
To stand approv'd in sight of God, though worlds  
Judg'd thee perverse : the easier conquest now  
Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,  
Back on thy foes more glorious to return  
Than scorn'd thou didst depart, and to subdue 40  
By force, who reason for their law refuse,  
Right reason for their law, and for their king  
Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.  
Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,  
And thou, in military prowess next, 45  
Gabriel, lead forth to battle these my sons  
Invincible, lead forth my armed Saints,  
By thousands and by millions rang'd for fight,  
Equal in number to that Godless crew  
Rebellious ; then with fire and hostile arms 50  
Fearless assault, and to the brow of Heaven  
Pursuing, drive them out from God and bliss  
Into their place of punishment, the gulf  
Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide  
His fiery Chaos to receive their fall.' 55

“ So spake the Sov'reign voice, and clouds began  
To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll  
In dusky wreaths, reluctant flames, the sign  
Of wrath awak'd ; nor with less dread the loud  
Ethereal trumpet from on high 'gan blow : 60  
At which command the Powers militant,  
That stood for Heav'n, in mighty quadrate join'd  
Of union irresistible, mov'd on,  
In silence, their bright legions to the sound  
Of instrumental harmony, that breath'd 65

Heroic ardour to advent'rous deeds,  
 Under their God-like leaders, in the cause  
 Of God and his Messiah. On they move,  
 Indissolubly firm; nor obvious hill,  
 Nor strait'ning vale, nor wood, nor stream, divides 70  
 Their perfect ranks; for high above the ground  
 Their march was, and the passive air upbore  
 Their nimble tread: as when the total kind  
 Of birds, in orderly array on wing,  
 Came, summon'd over Eden, to receive 75  
 Their names of thee; so over many a tract  
 Of Heav'n they march'd, and many a province wide,  
 Tenfold the length of this terrene. At last,  
 Far in th' horizon, to the north appear'd  
 From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd 80  
 In battailous aspect, and nearer view  
 Bristled with upright beams innumerable  
 Of rigid spears, and helmets throng'd and shields  
 Various, with boastful argument portray'd,  
 The banded Pow'rs of Satan, hasting on 85  
 With furious expedition; for they ween'd  
 That self-same day by fight, or by surprise,  
 To win the mount of God, and on his throne  
 To set the envier of his state, the proud  
 Aspirer; but their thoughts prov'd fond and vain 90  
 In the midway; though strange to us it seem'd  
 At first, that Angel should with Angel war,  
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet  
 So oft in festivals of joy and love  
 Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire, 95  
 Hymning th' eternal Father. But the shout,  
 Of battle now began, and rushing sound  
 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.  
 High in the midet, exalted as a God,  
 Th' Apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat, 100  
 Idol of majesty divine, enclos'd  
 With flaming Cherubim and golden shields;  
 Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now  
 Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,

- A dreadful interval, and front to front 105  
 Presented stood in terrible array  
 Of hideous length : before the cloudy van,  
 On the rough edge of battle ere it join'd,  
 Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanc'd,  
 Came tow'ring, arm'd in adamant and gold. 110  
 Abdiel that sight endur'd not, where he stood  
 Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,  
 And thus his own undaunted heart explores.  
 " O Heav'n ! that such resemblance of the Highest  
 Should yet remain, where faith and reälty 115  
 Remain not : wherefore should not strength and might  
 There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove  
 Where boldest, though to sight unconquerable?  
 His puissance, trusting in the Almighty's aid,  
 I mean to try, whose reason I have try'd 120  
 Unsound and false ; nor is it ought but just,  
 'That he who in debate of truth hath won,  
 Should win in arms, in both disputes alike  
 Victor ; though brutish that contést and foul,  
 When reason hath to deal with force, yet so 125  
 Most reason is that reason overcome.'  
 " So pondering, and from his armed peers  
 Forth stepping opposite, half way he met  
 His daring foe, at his prevention more  
 Incens'd, and thus securely him defy'd. 130  
 " Proud, art thou met ? thy hope was to have reach'd  
 The height of thy aspiring unoppos'd,  
 The throne of God unguarded, and his side  
 Abandon'd at the terror of thy power  
 Or potent tongue : fool, not to think how vain 135  
 Against th' Omnipotent to rise in arms ;  
 Who out of smallest things could without end  
 Have rais'd incessant armies to defeat  
 Thy folly ; or with solitary hand,  
 Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow 140  
 Unaided could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd  
 Thy legions under darkness. But thou seest

All are not of thy train ; there be who faith  
 Prefer, and piety to God, though then  
 To thee not visible, when I alone 145  
 Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent  
 From all : my sect thou seest ; now learn too late  
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.  
 " Whom the grand foe, with scornful eye askance,  
 Thus answer'd. ' Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour 150  
 Oft my revenge, first sought for, thou return'st  
 From flight, seditious Angel, to receive  
 Thy merited reward, the first assay  
 Of his right hand provok'd, since first that tongue,  
 Inspir'd with contradiction, durst oppose 155  
 A third part of the Gods, in synod met  
 Their deities to assert, who, while they feel  
 Vigour divine within them, can allow  
 Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st  
 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win 160  
 From me some plume, that thy success may show  
 Destruction to the rest : this pause between  
 (Unanswer'd lest thou boast) to let thee know ;  
 At first I thought that liberty and Heaven  
 To heavenly souls had been all one ; but now 165  
 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,  
 Ministering Spi'rits, train'd up in feast and song ;  
 Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of Heaven,  
 Servility with freedom to contend,  
 As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove.' 170  
 " To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern reply'd.  
 ' Apostate, still thou err'st, nor end wilt find  
 Of erring, from the path of truth remote :  
 Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name  
 Of servitude, to serve whom God ordains, 175  
 Or Nature ; God and Nature bid the same,  
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excels  
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,  
 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebell'd  
 Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 180  
 Thyself not free, but to thyself inthrall'd,

Yet lewdly dar'st our minist'ring upbraid.  
 Reign thou in Hell, thy kingdom; let me serve  
 In Heav'n God ever blest and his divine  
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd; 185  
 Yet chains in Hell, not realms expect: meanwhile  
 From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,  
 This greeting on thy impious crest receive.  
 "So Say'ing, a noble stroke he lifted high,  
 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190  
 On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,  
 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield,  
 Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge  
 He back recoil'd; the tenth on bended knee  
 His massy spear upstay'd; as if on earth 195  
 Winds under ground, or waters forcing way,  
 Sidelong had push'd a mountain from his seat,  
 Half sunk with all his pines. Amazement seiz'd  
 The rebel Thrones, but greater rage to see  
 Thus foil'd their mightiest; ours joy fill'd, and shout, 200  
 Presage of victory, and fierce desire  
 Of battle: whereat Michaël bid sound  
 Th' Archangel trumpet; through the vast of Heaven  
 It sounded, and the faithful armies rung  
 Hosannah to the Highest; nor stood at gaze 205  
 The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd  
 The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,  
 And clamour such as heard in Heav'n till now  
 Was never; arms on armour clashing bray'd  
 Horrible discord, and the madding wheels 210  
 Of brazen chariots rag'd; dire was the noise  
 Of conflict; over head the dismal hiss  
 Of fiery darts in flaming vollies flew,  
 And flying, vaulted either host with fire.  
 So under fiery cope together rush'd 215  
 Both battles main, with ruinous assault  
 And inextinguishable rage; all Heaven  
 Resounded, and had Earth been then, all Earth  
 Had to her centre shook. What wonder? when  
 Millions of fierce encount'ring Angels fought 220

On either side, the least of whom could wield  
 These elements, and arm him with the force  
 Of all their regions: how much more of power  
 Army' against army numberless to raise  
 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb, 225  
 Though not destroy, their happy native seat;  
 Had not th' eternal King omnipotent  
 From his strong hold of Heav'n high over-rul'd  
 And limited their might; though number'd such  
 As each divided legion might have seem'd 230  
 A numerous host, in strength each armed hand  
 A legion, led in fight, yet leader seem'd,  
 Each warrior single as in chief, expert  
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway  
 Of battle, open when, and when to close 235  
 The ridges of grim war; no thought of flight,  
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
 That argued fear; each on himself rely'd,  
 As only in his arm the moment lay  
 Of victory. Deeds of eternal fame 240  
 Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread  
 That war and various, sometimes on firm ground  
 A standing fight, then, soaring on main wing,  
 Tormented all the air; all air seem'd then  
 Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale 245  
 The battle hung; till Satan, who that day  
 Prodigious pow'r had shown, and met in arms  
 No equal, ranging through the dire attack  
 Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length  
 Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and fell'd 250  
 Squadrons at once; with huge two-handed sway,  
 Brandish'd aloft, the horrid edge came down  
 Wide wasting; such destruction to withstand  
 He hasted, and oppos'd the rocky orb  
 Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield, 225  
 A vast circumference. At his approach  
 The great Archangel from his warlike toil  
 Surceas'd, and glad, as hoping here to end  
 Intestine war in Heav'n, th' arch-foe subdu'd.

Or captive dragg'd in chains, with hostile frown, 260  
And visage all inflam'd, first thus began.

“ Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,  
Unnam'd in Heav'n, now plenteous as thou seest  
These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,  
Though heaviest by just measure on thyself 265  
And thy adherents : how hast thou disturb'd  
Heav'n's blessed peace, and into nature brought  
Misery, uncreated till the crime

Of thy rebellion ? how hast thou instill'd  
Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270  
And faithful, now prov'd false ? But think not here  
To trouble holy rest ; Heav'n casts thee out  
From all her confines. Heav'n, the seat of bliss,  
Brooks not the works of violence and war :

Hence then, and evil go with thee along, 275  
Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell,

Thou and thy wicked crew ; there mingle broils,  
Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,  
Or some more sudden vengeance wing'd from God  
Precipitate thee with augmented pain !” 280

“ So spake the prince of Angels ; to whom thus  
The adversary. Nor think thou with wind  
Of airy threats to awe whom yet with deeds  
Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these 285  
To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise  
Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me

That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats  
To chase me hence ? err not that so shall end  
The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style  
The strife of glory ; which we mean to win, 290  
Or torn this Heav'n itself into the Hell

Thou fablest, here however to dwell free,  
If not to reign : meanwhile thy utmost force,  
And join him nam'd Almighty to thy aid,  
I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh.” 295

“ They ended parle, and both address'd for fight  
Unapeakable ; for who, though with the tongue  
Of Angels, can relate, or to what things

Liken on earth conspicuous, that may lift  
 Human imagination to such height 300  
 Of Godlike pow'r? for likest Gods they seem'd,  
 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms,  
 Fit to decide the empire of great Heaven.  
 Now wav'd their fiery swords, and in the air  
 Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields 305  
 Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood  
 In horror; from each hand with speed retired,  
 Where erst was thickest fight, the angelic throng,  
 And left large fields, unsafe within the wind  
 Of such commotion; such as, to set forth 310  
 Great things by small, if nature's concord broke,  
 Among the constellations war were sprung,  
 Two planets rushing from aspect malign  
 Of fiercest opposition in mid-sky  
 Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound. 315  
 Together both with next t' almighty arm  
 Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aim'd  
 That might determine, and not need repeat,  
 As not of pow'r at once; nor odds appear'd  
 In might or swift prevention: but the sword 320  
 Of Michael, from the amoury of God,  
 Was giv'n him temper'd so, that neither keen  
 Nor solid might resist that edge: it met  
 The sword of Satan with steep force to smite  
 Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor stay'd, 325  
 But with swift wheel reverse, deep ent'ring, shar'd  
 All his right side: then Satan first knew pain,  
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so sore  
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound  
 Pass'd thro' him; but th' ethereal substance clos'd, 330  
 Not long divisible; and from the gash  
 A stream of necta'rous humour issuing flow'd  
 Sanguine, such as celestial Spi'rits may bleed,  
 And all his armour stain'd ere while so bright.  
 Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run 335  
 By Angels many' and strong, who interpos'd  
 Defence, while others bore him on their shields

Back to his chariot, where it stood retir'd  
 From off the files of war; there they him laid  
 Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame, 340  
 To find himself not matchless, and his pride  
 Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath  
 His confidence to equal God in power.  
 Yet soon he heal'd; for Spirits that live throughout  
 Vital in every part, not as frail man 345  
 In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,  
 Cannot but by annihilating die;  
 Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound  
 Receive, no more than can the fluid air:  
 All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear, 350  
 All intellect, all sense; and as they please,  
 They limb themselves, and colour shape, or size,  
 Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.

“ Meanwhile in other parts like deeds deserv'd  
 Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought, 355  
 And with fierce ensigns pierc'd the deep array  
 Of Moloch, furious king; who him defy'd,  
 And at his chariot-wheels to drag him bound  
 Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of Heaven  
 Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon, 360  
 Down cloven to the waist, with shatter'd arms  
 And uncouth pain, fled bellowing. On each wing  
 Uriel and Raphaël his vaunting foe,  
 Though huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd,  
 Vanquish'd, Adramelech and Asmadai, 365  
 Two potent thrones, that to be less than Gods  
 Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,  
 Mangled with ghastly wounds thro' plate and mail.  
 Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy  
 The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow 370  
 Ariel and Arioch, and the violence  
 Of Ramiel, scorch'd and blasted, overthrew.  
 I might relate of thousands, and their names  
 Eternize here on earth; but those elect  
 Angels, contented with their fame in Heaven, 375  
 Seek not the praise of men: the other sort,

In might though wondrous, and in acts of war,  
 Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom  
 Cancel'd from Heav'n and sacred memory,  
 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell. 380  
 For strength, from truth divided and from just,  
 Illaudable, nought merits but dispraise  
 And ignominy, yet to glory 'aspires  
 Vain glorious, and through infamy seeks fame :  
 Therefore eternal silence be their doom. 385  
 " And now their mightiest quell'd, the battle swerv'd,  
 With many an inroad gor'd ; deformed rout  
 Enter'd, and foul disorder ; all the ground  
 With shiver'd armour strown, and on a heap  
 Chariot and charioteer lay overturn'd 390  
 And fiery foaming steeds ; what stood, recoil'd  
 O'erwearied, through the faint Satanic host  
 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpriz'd,  
 Then first with fear surpris'd and sense of pain,  
 Fled ignominious. to such evil brought 395  
 By sin of disobedience, till that hour  
 Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.  
 Far otherwise, th' inviolable Saints  
 In cubic phalanx firm advanc'd entire,  
 Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd ; 400  
 Such high advantages their innocence  
 Gave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd,  
 Not to have disobey'd ; in sight they stood  
 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd 404  
 By wound, tho' from their place by violence mov'd.  
 " Now night her course began, and over Heaven  
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,  
 And silence on the odious din of war :  
 Under her cloudy covert both retir'd,  
 Victor and vanquish'd. On the foughten field 410  
 Michaël and his Angels prevalent  
 Incamping, plac'd in guard their watches round,  
 Cherubic waving fires : on th' other part  
 Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,  
 Far in the dark, dislodg'd, and void of rest, 415

His potentates to council call'd by night ;  
And in the midst thus undismay'd began.

“ O now in danger try'd, now known in arms  
Not to be overpower'd, companions dear,  
Found worthy not of liberty alone, 420  
Too mean pretence, but, what we more affect,  
Honour, dominion, glory, and renown ;  
Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight  
(And if one day, why not eternal days ?)  
What Heav'n's Lord had pow'rfullest to send 425  
Against us from about his throne, and judg'd  
Sufficient to subdue us to his will,  
But proves not so : then fallible, it seems,  
Of future we may deem him, though till now  
Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd, 430  
Some disadvantage we endur'd and pain,  
Till now not known, but known, as soon contemn'd ;  
Since now we find this our empyreal form  
Incapable of mortal injury,  
Imperishable, and, though pierc'd with wound, 435  
Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.  
Of evil then so small, as easy think  
The remedy ; perhaps more valid arms,  
Weapons more violent, when next we meet,  
May serve to better us, and worse our foes, 440  
Or equal what between us made the odds,  
In nature none : if other hidden cause  
Left them superior, while we can preserve  
Unhurt our minds and understanding sound,  
Due search and consultation will disclose.' 445

“ He sat : and in the assembly next upstood  
Nisroch, of Principalities the prime ;  
As one he stood escap'd from cruel fight,  
Sore toil'd, his riven arms to havock hewn,  
And cloudy in aspect thus answering spake. 450  
“ Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free  
Enjoyment of our right as Gods ; yet hard  
For Gods, and too unequal work we find,  
Against unequal arms to fight in pain,

Against unpain'd, impassive ; from which evil 455  
 Ruin must needs ensue ; for what avails  
 Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain  
 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands  
 Of mightiest ? Sense of pleasure we may well  
 Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine, 460  
 But live content, which is the calmest life :  
 But pain is perfect misery, the worst  
 Of evils, and, excessive, overturns  
 All patience. He who therefore can invent  
 With what more forcible we may offend 465  
 Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm  
 Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves  
 No less than for deliverance what we owe.'  
 " Whereto with look compos'd Satan reply'd.  
 ' Not uninvented that, which thou aright 470  
 Believ'st so main to our success, I bring.  
 Which of us who beholds the bright surface  
 Of this etherious mold whereon we stand,  
 This continent of spacious Heav'n adorn'd  
 With plant, fruit, flow'r ambrosial, gems, and gold ; 475  
 Whose eye so superficially surveys  
 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow  
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,  
 Of spirituous and fiery spume, till touch'd  
 With Heaven's ray, and temper'd, they shoot forth 480  
 So beauteous, opening to the ambient light ?  
 These in their dark nativity the deep  
 Shall yield us pregnant with infernal flame ;  
 Which into hollow engines long and round  
 Thick-ramm'd, at th' other bore with touch of fire 485  
 Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth  
 From far, with thund'ring noise, among our foes  
 Such implements of mischief, as shall dash  
 To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands  
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd 490  
 The Thund'rer of his only dreaded bolt.  
 Nor long shall be our labour ; yet ere dawn  
 Effect shall end our wish. Meanwhile revive ;

Abandon fear; to strength and counsel join'd  
Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd. 495

“ He ended, and his words their drooping cheer  
Enlighten'd, and their languish'd hope reviv'd.  
Th' invention all admir'd, and each how he  
To be th' inventor miss'd; so easy' it seem'd  
Once found, which yet unfound, most would have thought  
Impossible: yet haply of thy race, 501

In future days, if malice should abound,  
Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd  
With devilish machination, might devise  
Like instrument to plague the sons of men 505

For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.  
Forthwith from council to the work they flew;  
None arguing stood; innumerable hands  
Were ready; in a moment up they turn'd  
Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath 510

Th' originals of nature in their crude  
Conception; sulphurous and nitrous foam  
They found, they mingled, and with subtle art,  
Concocted and adusted, they reduc'd  
To blackest grain, and into store convey'd: 515

Part hidden veins digg'd up (nor hath this earth  
Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,  
Whereof to found their engines and their balls  
Of missive ruin; part incentive red  
Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire. 520

So all, ere day-spring, under conscious night,  
Secret they finish'd and in order set,  
With silent circumspection unesp'y'd.

“ Now when fair morn orient in Heaven appear'd,  
Up rose the victor Angels, and to arms 525

The matin trumpet sung: in arms they stood  
Of golden panoply, refulgent host,  
Soon banded; others from the dawning hills  
Look'd round, and scouts each coast light armed scour,  
Each quarter, to descry the distant foe, 530

Where lodg'd or whither fled, or if for fight,  
In motion or in halt: him soon they met

Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow  
 But firm battalion ; back with speediest sail  
 Zophiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing, 535  
 Came fly'ing, and in mid air aloud thus cry'd.

“ ‘ Arm, Warriors, arm for fight ; the foe at hand,  
 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit  
 This day ; fear not his flight : so thick a cloud  
 He comes, and settled in his face I see 540  
 Sad resolution and secure ; let each  
 His adamantine coat gird well, and each  
 Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orb'd shield,  
 Borne ev'n or high ; for this day will pour down,  
 If I conjecture ought no drizzling shower, 545  
 But rattling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.’

“ So warn'd he them, aware themselves, and soon  
 In order, quit of all impediment ;  
 Instant without disturb they took alarm,  
 And onward move embattled : when behold 550  
 Not distant far with heavy pace the foe  
 Approaching, gross and huge, in hollow cube  
 Training his devilish enginry, impal'd  
 On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,  
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood 555  
 A while ; but suddenly at head appear'd  
 Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud.

“ ‘ Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold ;  
 That all may see who hate us, how we seek  
 Peace and composure, and with open breast 560  
 Stand ready to receive them, if they like  
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse :  
 But that I doubt ; however, witness Heaven,  
 Heaven witness thou anon, while we discharge  
 Freely our part ; ye who appointed stand, 565  
 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch  
 What we propound, and loud that all may hear.’

“ So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce  
 Had ended, when to right and left the front  
 Divided, and to either flank retir'd ; 570  
 Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange,

A triple mounted row of pillars laid  
 On wheels (for like to pillars most they seem'd,  
 Or hollow'd bodies made of oak or fir,  
 With branches lopt, in wood or mountain fell'd) 575  
 Brass, iron, stony mould, had not their mouths  
 With hideous orifice gap'd on us wide,  
 Portending hollow truce: at each behind  
 A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed  
 Stood waving tipt with fire; while we suspense 580  
 Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd;  
 Not long, for sudden all at once their reeds  
 Put forth, and to a narrow vent apply'd  
 With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame, 584  
 But soon obscur'd with smoke, all Heav'n appear'd,  
 From those deep-throated engines belch'd whose roar,  
 Embowel'd with outrageous noise the air,  
 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul  
 Their devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts and hail  
 Of iron globes; which on the victor host 590  
 Levell'd, with such impetuous fury smote,  
 That whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,  
 Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell  
 By thousands, Angel on Archangel roll'd;  
 The sooner for their arms; unarm'd they might 595  
 Have easily as Spi'rits evaded swift  
 By quick contraction or remove; but now  
 Foul dissipation follow'd and forc'd rout;  
 Nor serv'd it to relax their serried files.  
 What should they do? if on they rush'd, repulse 600  
 Repeated, and indecent overthrow  
 Doubled, would render them yet more despis'd,  
 And to their foes a laughter; for in view  
 Stood rank'd of Seraphim another row,  
 In posture to displode their second tire 605  
 Of thunder: back defeated to return  
 They worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld their plight,  
 Aud to his mates thus in derision call'd.

"O Friends, why come not on these victor's proud?  
 Ere while they fierce were coming; and when we 610

To entertain them fair with open front  
 And breast (what could we more?) propounded terms  
 Of composition, straight they chang'd their minds,  
 Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,  
 As they would dance; yet for a dance they seem'd 615  
 Somewhat extravagant and wild, perhaps  
 For joy of offer'd peace: but I suppose,  
 If our proposals once again were heard,  
 We should compel them to a quick result.'

“ To whom thus Belial in like gamesome mood. 620  
 ‘ Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,  
 Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home,  
 Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,  
 And stumbled many; who receives them right,  
 Had need from head to foot well understand; 625  
 Not understood, this gift they have besides,  
 They show us when our foes walk not upright.’

“ So they among themselves in pleasant vein  
 Stood scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond 630  
 All doubt of victory; eternal might  
 To match with their inventions they presum'd  
 So easy, and of his thunder made a scorn,  
 And all his host derided, while they stood  
 A while in trouble: but they stood not long;  
 Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms 635  
 Against such hellish mischief fit to' oppose.  
 Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power,  
 Which God hath in his mighty Angels plac'd)  
 Their arms away they threw, and to the Hills  
 (For earth hath this variety from Heaven 640  
 Of pleasure situate in hill and dale)  
 Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew;  
 From their foundations loos'ning to and fro  
 They pluck'd the seated hills with all their load,  
 Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops 645  
 Uplifting bore them in their hands. Amaze,  
 Be sure, and terror seiz'd the rebel host,  
 When coming towards them so dread they saw  
 The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd;

Till on those cursed engines triple-row 650  
 They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence  
 Under the weight of mountains buried deep ;  
 Themselves invaded next, and on their heads  
 Main promontories flung, which in the air 654  
 Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd ;  
 Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and bruis'd  
 Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain  
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,  
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind  
 Out of such pris'on, tho' Spi'rits of purest light, 660  
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.  
 The rest in imitation to like arms  
 Betook them, and the neighbouring hills uptore ;  
 So hills amid the air encounter'd hills,  
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire 665  
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade  
 Infernal noise ; war seem'd a civil game  
 To this uproar ! horrid confusion heap'd  
 Upon confusion rose. And now all Heaven  
 Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread, 670  
 Had not the almighty Father, where he sits  
 Shrin'd in his sanctuary of Heav'n secure,  
 Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen  
 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd ;  
 That his great purpose he might so fulfil, 675  
 To honour his anointed Son aveng'd  
 Upon his enemies, and to declare  
 All pow'r to him transferr'd : whence to his Son,  
 'Th' assessor of his throne, he thus began.  
 " ' Effulgence of my glory, Son belov'd, 680  
 Son in whose face invisible is beheld,  
 Visibly, what by deity I am,  
 And in whose hand by what decree I do,  
 Second Omnipotence, two days are past,  
 Two days as we compute the days of Heaven, 685  
 Since Michael and his Pow'rs went forth to tame  
 These disobedient : sore hath been their fight,  
 As likeliest was, when two such foes met arm'd ;

For to themselves I left them, and thou know'st,  
 Equal in their creation they were form'd, 690  
 Save what sin hath impair'd, which yet hath wrought  
 Insensibly, for I suspend their doom ;  
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last  
 Endless, and no solution will be found.  
 War wearied hath perform'd what war can do, 695  
 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins,  
 With mountains as with weapons arm'd, which makes  
 Wild work in Heav'n, and dangerous to the main.  
 Two days are therefore past, the third is thine ;  
 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus far 700  
 Have suffer'd, that the glory may be thine  
 Of ending this great war, since none but Thou  
 Can end it. Into thee such virtue' and grace  
 Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know  
 In Heaven and Hell thy pow'r above compare ; 705  
 And this perverse commotion govern'd thus,  
 To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir  
 Of all things, to be Heir and to be King  
 By sacred unction, thy deserved right.  
 Go then, thou Mightiest, in thy Father's might, 710  
 Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels  
 That shake the Heav'n's basis, bring forth all my war,  
 My bow and thunder, my almighty arms  
 Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh ;  
 Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out 715  
 From all Heav'n's bounds into the utter deep :  
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise  
 God, and Messiah his anointed king.'

" He said, and on his Son with rays direct  
 Shone full ; he all his Father full express'd 720  
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd ;  
 And thus the filial Godhead answering spake.

" O Father, O Supreme of heav'nly Thrones,  
 First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou always seek'st  
 To glorify thy Son, I always thee, 725  
 As is most just ; this I my glory' account,  
 My exaltation, and my whole delight,

That thou in me, well pleas'd, declar'st thy will  
 Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.  
 Sceptre and pow'r, thy giving, I assume, 730  
 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end  
 Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee  
 For ever, and in me all whom thou lov'st :  
 But whom thou hat'st I hate, and can put on  
 Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on, 735  
 Image of thee in all things ; and shall soon,  
 Arm'd with thy might, rid Heav'n of these rebell'd,  
 To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down,  
 To chains of darkness, and th' undying worm,  
 That from thy just obedience could revolt, 740  
 Whom to obey is happiness entire.  
 Then shall thy Saints unmix'd, and from th' impure  
 Far separate, circling thy holy mount,  
 Unfeign'd Halleluiahs to thee sing,  
 Hymns of thy praise, and I among them chief.'  
 " So said, he, o'er his sceptre bowing, rose 745  
 From the right hand of glory where he sat ;  
 And the third sacred morn began to shine,  
 Dawning through Heav'n : forth rush'd with whirlwind  
 sound  
 The chariot of paternal Deity. 750  
 Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn,  
 Itself instinct with Spirit, but convoy'd  
 By four Cherubic shapes ; four faces each  
 Had wondrous ; as with stars their bodies all  
 And wings were set with eyes, with eyes the wheels  
 Of beryl, and careering fires between ; 756  
 Over their heads a crystal firmament,  
 Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure  
 Amber, and colours of the show'ry arch.  
 He in celestial panoply all arm'd 760  
 Of radiant Urim, work divinely wrought,  
 Ascended ; at his right hand victory  
 Sat eagle-wing'd ; beside him hung his bow  
 And quiver with three-bolted thunderstor'd,  
 And from about him fierce effusion rol'd 765

Of smoke and bickering flame and sparkles dire ;  
 Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints  
 He onward came, far off his coming shone ;  
 And twenty thousand (I their number heard)  
 Chariots of God, half on each hand were seen : 770  
 He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime  
 On the crystalline sky, in sapphire thron'd,  
 Illustrious far and wide, but by his own  
 First seen ; them unexpected joy surpris'd,  
 When the great ensign of Messiah blaz'd 775  
 Aloft by angels borne, his sign in Heaven ;  
 Under whose conduct Michael soon reduc'd  
 His army, circumfus'd on either wing,  
 Under their Head embodied all in one.  
 Before him pow'r divine his way prepar'd : 780  
 At his command th' uprooted hills retir'd  
 Each to his place ; they heard his voice and went  
 Obsequious ; Heav'n his wonted face renew'd,  
 And with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smil'd.  
 This saw his hapless foes, but stood obdur'd, 785  
 And to rebellious fight rallied their Powers  
 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.  
 In heav'nly Spi'rits could such perverseness dwell,  
 But to convince the proud what signs avail,  
 Or wonders move, th' obdurate to relent ? 790  
 They harden'd more by what might most reclaim,  
 Grieving to see his glory, at the sight  
 Took envy ; and, aspiring to his height,  
 Stood re-embattled fierce, by force or fraud  
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevail 795  
 Against God and Messiah, or to fall  
 In universal ruin last ; and now  
 To final battle drew, disdain'g flight,  
 Or faint retreat ; when the great son of God  
 To all his host on either hand thus spake. 800  
 " Stand still in bright array, ye Saints, here stand  
 Ye Angels arm'd, this day from battle rest ;  
 Faithful hath been your warfare and of God  
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause,

And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye done 805  
 Invincibly ; but of this cursed crew  
 The punishment to other hand belongs ;  
 Vengèance is his, or whose he sole appoints :  
 Number to this day's work is not ordain'd  
 Nor multitude ; stand only and behold 810  
 God's indignation on these Godless pour'd  
 By me ; not you, but me, they have despis'd,  
 Yet envied ; against me is all their rage,  
 Because the Father, t' whom in Heav'n supreme  
 Kingdom, and pow'r, and glory, appertains, 815  
 Hath honour'd me according to his will,  
 Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd ;  
 That they may have their wish, to try with me  
 In battle which the stronger proves, they all,  
 Or I alone against them, since by strength 820  
 They measure all, of other excellence  
 Not emulous, nor care who them excels ;  
 Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.  
 " So spake the Son, and into terror chang'd  
 His count'nance, too severe to be beheld, 825  
 And full of wrath bent on his enemies.  
 At once the Four spread out their starry wings  
 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs  
 Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound  
 Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host. 830  
 He on his impious foes right onward drove,  
 Gloomy as night ; under his burning wheels  
 The steadfast empyréan shook throughout,  
 All but the throne itself of God. Full soon  
 Among them he arriv'd, in his right hand 835  
 Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent  
 Before him, such as in their souls infix'd  
 Plagues ; they, astonish'd, all resistance lost,  
 All courage ; down their idle weapons drop ;  
 O'er shields and helms and helmed heads he rode 840  
 Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,  
 That wish'd the mountains now might be again  
 Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.

No, less on either side tempestuous fell  
 His arrows, from the fourfold-visag'd Four 845  
 Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels  
 Distinct alike with multitude of eyes;  
 One Spirit in them rul'd, and every eye  
 Glar'd lightning and shot forth pernicious fire  
 Among the accurs'd, that wither'd all their strength,  
 And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd, 851  
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.  
 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd  
 His thunder in mid volley; for he meant  
 Not to destroy, but root them out of Heaven: 855  
 The overthrown he rais'd, and as a herd  
 Of goats or timorous flock together throng'd,  
 Drove them before him thunder-struck, pursued,  
 With terrors and with furies, to the bounds  
 And crystal wall of Heav'n, which opening wide, 860  
 Roll'd inward, and a spacious gap disclos'd  
 Into the wasteful deep; the monstrous sight  
 Struck them with horror backward, but far worse  
 Urg'd them behind; headlong themselves they threw  
 Down from the verge of Heaven; eternal wrath 865  
 Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.

“ Hell heard the unsufferable noise, Hell saw  
 Heav'n ruining from Heav'n, and would have fled  
 Affrighted; but strict Fate had cast too deep  
 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870  
 Nine days they fell; confounded Chaos roar'd,  
 And felt tenfold confusion in their fall  
 Through this wild anarchy, so huge a rout  
 Encumber'd him with ruin: Hell at last  
 Yawning received them whole, and on them clos'd;  
 Hell their fit habitation, fraught with fire 876  
 Unquenchable, the house of wo and pain.  
 Disburden'd Heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repair'd  
 Her mutual breach, returning whence it roll'd.  
 Sole victor from th' expulsion of his foes 880  
 Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd:  
 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood

Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts  
 With jubilee advanc'd ; and as they went,  
 Shading with branching palm, each order bright, 885  
 Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,  
 Son, Heir and Lord, to him dominion given,  
 Worthiest to reign : he celebrated rode  
 Triumphant through mid Heav'n, into the courts  
 And temple of his mighty Father thron'd 890  
 On high ; who into glory him receiv'd,  
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.  
 " Thus measuring things in Heav'n by things on Earth,  
 At thy request, and that thou may'st beware  
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd 895  
 What might have else to human race been hid ;  
 The discord which befel, and war in Heaven  
 Among th' angelic Pow'rs, and the deep fall  
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd  
 With Satan ; he who envies now thy state, 900  
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce  
 Thee also from obedience, that with him,  
 Bereaved of happiness, thou may'st partake  
 His punishment, eternal misery ;  
 Which would be all his solace and revenge, 905  
 As a despite done against the most High,  
 Thee once to gain companion of his woe.  
 But listen not to his temptations, waru  
 Thy weaker ; let it profit thee to' have heard,  
 By terrible example, the reward 910  
 Of disobedience ; firm they might have stood,  
 Yet fell : remember, and fear to transgress."

END OF THE SIXTH BOOK.

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

**BOOK VI.**

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

Raphael at the request of Adam, relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his Angels out of Heaven, declared his pleasure to create another world and other creatures to dwell therein: sends his Son with glory and attendance of Angels to perform the work of creation in six days: the Angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his reascension into Heaven.

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK VII.

DESCEND from Heav'n, Urania, by that name  
If rightly thou art call'd, whose voice divine  
Following, above th' Olympian hill I soar,  
Above the flight of Pegaséan wing.  
The meaning, not the name, I call: for thou 5  
Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top  
Of old Olympus dwell'st, but heav'nly born,  
Before the hills appear'd, or fountains flow'd,  
Thou with eternal wisdom didst converse,  
Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play 10  
In presence of th' almighty Father, pleas'd  
With thy celestial song. Up led by thee  
Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns I have presum'd,  
An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,  
Thy temp'ring; with like safety guided down 15  
Return me to my native element:  
Lest from this flying steed unrein'd, (as once  
Bellerophon, though from a lower clime)  
Dismounted, on th' Aleian field I fall,  
Erroneous there to wander, and forlorn. 20  
Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound,  
Within the visible diurnal sphere;  
Standing on earth, not rapt above the pole,  
More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchang'd  
To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil days, 25  
On evil days though fall'n, and evil tongues;  
In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,  
And solitude; yet not alone, while thou

Visit'st my slumber nightly, or when morn  
 Purples the east: still govern thou my song,  
 Urania, and fit audience find, though few.  
 But drive far off the barbarous dissonance  
 Of Bacchus and his revelers, the race  
 Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard  
 In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears 35  
 To rapture, till the savage clamour drown'd  
 Both harp and voice ; nor could the muse defend  
 Her son. So fail not thou, who thee implores ;  
 For thou art heav'nly, she an empty dream.  
 Say, Goddess, what ensued when Raphaël, 40  
 The affable Archangel, had forewarn'd  
 Adam by dire example to beware  
 Apostasy, by what befel in Heaven  
 'To those apostates, lest the like befall  
 In Paradise to Adam or his race, 45  
 Charg'd not to touch the interdicted tree,  
 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,  
 So easily obey'd, amid the choice  
 Of all tastes else to please their appetite,  
 Though wand'ring. He with his consorted Eve 50  
 The story heard attentive, and was fill'd  
 With admiration and deep muse, to hear  
 Of things so high and strange, things to their thought  
 So unimaginable as hate in Heaven,  
 And war so near the peace of God in bliss 55  
 With such confusion: but the evil soon,  
 Driv'n back, redounded as a flood on those  
 From whom it sprung, impossible to mix  
 With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repeal'd  
 The doubts that in his heart arose: and now 60  
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know  
 What nearer might concern him ; how this world  
 Of Heav'n and Earth conspicuous first began,  
 When, and whereof created, for what cause,  
 What within Eden or without was done 65  
 Before his memory ; as one whose drought,  
 Yet scarce allay'd, still eyes the current stream,

Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,  
 Proceeded thus to ask his heav'nly guest.

- “ Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, 70  
 Far differing from this world, thou hast reveal'd,  
 Divine interpreter, by favour sent  
 Down from the empyréan to forewarn  
 Us timely' of what might else have been our loss,  
 Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach: 75  
 For which to th' infinitely Good we owe  
 Immortal thanks, and his admonishment  
 Receive, with solemn purpose to observe  
 Immutably his sov'reign will, the end  
 Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsaf'd 80  
 Gently for our instruction to impart  
 Things above earthly thought, which yet concern'd  
 Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seem'd,  
 Deign to descend now lower, and relate  
 What may no less perhaps avail us known; 85  
 How first began this Heav'n which we behold  
 Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd  
 Innumerable, and this which yields or fills  
 All space, the ambient air wide interfus'd  
 Embracing round this florid earth; what cause 90  
 Mov'd the Creator, in his holy rest  
 Through all eternity, so late to build  
 In Chaos, and, the work begun, how soon  
 Absolv'd, if unforbid thou may'st unfold  
 What we, not to explore the secrets, ask 95  
 Of his eternal empire, but the more  
 To magnify his works, the more we know.  
 And the great light of day yet wants to run  
 Much of his race though steep; suspense in Heaven,  
 Held by thy voice, thy potent voice, he hears, 100  
 And longer will delay to hear thee tell  
 His generation, and the rising birth  
 Of nature from the unapparent deep:  
 Or if the star of evening and the moon  
 Haste to thy audience, night with her will bring  
 Silence, and sleep, list'ning to thee, will watch, 106

Or we can bid his absence, till thy song  
End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine.”

Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought :  
And thus the Godlike Angel answer'd mild. 110

“ This also thy request, with caution ask'd,  
Obtain : though to recount almighty works,  
What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,  
Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?

Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve 115  
To glorify the Maker, and infer

Thee also happier, shall not be withheld  
Thy hearing ; such commission from above  
I have receiv'd, to answer thy desire  
Of knowledge within bounds ; beyond abstain 120

To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope  
Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,  
Only omniscient, hath suppress'd in night,  
To none communicable in Earth or Heaven :  
Enough is left besides to search and know. 125

But knowledge is as food, and needs no less  
Her temp'rance over appetite, to know  
In measure what the mind may well contain ;  
Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns  
Wisdom to folly', as nourishment to wind. 130

“ Know then, that after Lucifer from Heaven  
(So call him, brighter once amidst the host  
Of Angels than that star the stars among)  
Fell with his flaming legions through the deep  
Into his place, and the great Son return'd 135  
Victorious with his Saints, th' omnipotent  
Eternal Father from his throne beheld  
Their multitude and to his Son thus spake.

“ At least our envious foe hath fail'd, who thought  
All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 140

This inaccessible high strength, the seat  
Of deity supreme, us dispossess'd,  
He trusted to have seiz'd, and into fraud  
Drew many, whom their place knows here no more ;  
Yet far the greater part have kept, I see, 145

Their station ; Heav'n yet populous retains  
 Number sufficient to possess her realms  
 Though wide, and this high temple to frequent  
 With ministeries due and solemn rites :  
 But lest his heart exalt him in the harm  
 Already done, to have dispeopled Heaven,  
 My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair  
 That detriment, if such it be to lose  
 Self-lost, and in a moment will create  
 Another world, out of one man a race  
 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,  
 Not here, till by degrees of merit rais'd  
 They open to themselves at length the way  
 Up either, under long obedience try'd,  
 And Earth be chang'd to Heav'n, and Heav'n to Earth,  
 One kingdom, joy and union without end,  
 Meanwhile inhabit lax, ye Pow'rs of Heav'n,  
 And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee  
 This I perform ; speak thou, and be it done :  
 My overshadowing Spi'rit and might with thee  
 I send along ; ride forth and bid the deep  
 Within appointed bounds be Heav'n and Earth,  
 Boundless the deep, because I am who fill  
 Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.  
 Though I uncircumscrib'd myself retire,  
 And put not forth my goodness, which is free  
 To act or not, necessity and chance  
 Approach not me, and what I will is fate.  
 " So spake th' Almighty, and to what he spake  
 His Word, the filial Godhead, gave effect.  
 Immediate are the acts of God, more swift  
 Than time or motion, but to human ears  
 Cannot without process of speech be told,  
 So told as earthly notion can receive.  
 Great triumph and rejoicing was in Heaven,  
 When such was heard declar'd the Almighty's will ;  
 Glory they sung to the Most High, good-will  
 To future men, and in their dwellings peace :  
 Glory to him, whose just avenging ire

Had driven out the ungodly from his sight 185  
 And th' habitations of the just; to him  
 Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd  
 Good out of evil to create, instead  
 Of Spi'rits malign, a better race to bring  
 Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse 190  
 His good to worlds and ages infinite.

“ So sang the Hierarchies : meanwhile the Son  
 On his great expedition now appear'd,  
 Girt with omnipotence, with radiance crown'd  
 Of majesty divine; sapience and love 200  
 Immense, and alo his Father in him shone.

About his chariot numberless were pour'd  
 Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,  
 And Virtues, winged Spi'rits, and chariots wing'd  
 From th' armoury of God, where stand of old 205

Myriads between two brazen mountains lodg'd  
 Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,  
 Celestial equipage, and now came forth  
 Spontaneous, for within them Spirit liv'd,  
 Attendant on their Lord: Heav'n open'd wide 210

Her ever-during gates, harmonious sound  
 On golden hinges moving, to let forth  
 The king of Glory, in his pow'eful word  
 And Spirit coming to create new worlds.

On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore 215

They view'd the vast immeasurible abyss  
 Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,  
 Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds  
 And surging waves, as mountains, to assault 219  
 Heav'n's height, and with the centre mix the pole.

“ ‘ Silence, ye troubled waves, and thou deep, peace,’  
 Said then th' omnific Word, ‘ your discord end:’

Nor stay'd, but on the wings of Cherubim  
 Uplifted, in paternal glory rode  
 Far into Chaos, and the world unborn; 225

For Chaos heard his voice. Him all his train  
 Follow'd in bright procession to behold  
 Creation, and the wonders of his might,

Then stay'd the fervid wheels, and in his hand  
 He took the golden compasses, prepar'd 230  
 In God's eternal store, to circumscribe  
 This universe, and all created things :  
 One foot he center'd and the other turn'd  
 Round through the vast profundity obscure,  
 And said, ' Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds, 235  
 This be thy just circumference, O world.'  
 Thus God the Heav'n created, thus the Earth,  
 Matter unform'd and void : Darkness profound  
 Cover'd th' abyss ; but on the wat'ry calm  
 His brooding wings the Spi'rit of God outspread, 240  
 And vital virtue' infus'd, and vital warmth  
 Throughout, he fluid mass, but downward purg'd  
 The black tartareous cold infernal dregs  
 Adverse to life ; then founded, then conglob'd  
 Like things to like, the rest to several place 245  
 Disparted, and between spun out the air,  
 And Earth self-balanc'd on her centre hung.  
 " ' Let there be light,' said God, and forthwith light  
 Etherial, first of things, quintessence pure,  
 Sprung from the deep, and from her native east 250  
 To journey through the airy gloom began,  
 Spher'd in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun  
 Was not ; she in a cloudy tabernacle  
 Sojourn'd the while. God saw the light was good ;  
 And light from darkness by the hemisphere 355  
 Divided : light the day, and darkness night  
 He nam'd. Thus was the first day ev'n and morn :  
 Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung  
 By the celestial quires, when orient light  
 Exhaling first from darkness they beheld ; 260  
 Birth-day of Heav'n and Earth ; with joy and shout  
 The hollow universal orb they fill'd,  
 And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning prais'd  
 God and his works, Creator him they sung,  
 Both when first evening was, and when first morn. 265  
 " Again, God said, ' Let there be firmament  
 Amid the waters, and let it divide

The waters from the waters :<sup>c</sup> and God made  
 The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,  
 Transparent, elemental air, diffus'd 270  
 In circuit to the uttermost convex  
 Of this great round ; partition firm and sure,  
 The waters underneath from those above  
 Dividing : for as earth, so he the world  
 Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide 275  
 Crystalline ocean, and the loud misrule  
 Of Chaos far remov'd, lest fierce extremes  
 Contiguous might distemper the whole frame.  
 And Heav'n he nam'd the firmament : So even  
 And morning chorus sung the second day. 280  
 — " The earth was form'd but in the womb as yet  
 Of waters, embryo immature involv'd,  
 Appear'd not : over all the face of earth  
 Main ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warm  
 Prolific humour soft'ning all her globe, 285  
 Fermented the great mother to conceive.  
 Sate with genial moisture, when God said,  
 ' Be gather'd now ye waters under Heaven  
 Into one place, and let dry land appear.'  
 Immediately the mountains huge appear 290  
 Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave  
 Into the clouds, their tops ascend the sky ;  
 So high as heav'd the tumid hills, so low  
 Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,  
 Capacious bed of waters : thither they 295  
 Basted with glad precipitance, uproll'd  
 As drops on dust conglobing from the dry ;  
 Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,  
 For haste ; such flight the great command impress'd  
 On the swift floods. As armies at the call 300  
 Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)  
 Troop to their standard, so the wat'ry throng,  
 Wave rolling after wave, where way they found,  
 If steep, with torrent rapture, if through plain,  
 Soft-ebbing ; nor withstood them rock or hill, 305  
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide

With serpent error wand'ring, found their way,  
 And on the washy ooze deep channels wore ;  
 Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry,  
 All but within those banks, where rivers now 310  
 Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.  
 The dry land earth, and the great receptacle  
 Of congregated waters he call'd seas :  
 And saw that it was good, and said, ' Let th' earth  
 Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed, 315  
 And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,  
 Whose seed is in herself upon the earth.'  
 He scarce had said, when the bare earth, till then  
 Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,  
 Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad 320  
 Her universal face with pleasant green ;  
 Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flow'r'd  
 Opening their various colours, and made gay  
 Her bosom smelling sweet ; and these scarce blown,  
 Forth flourish'd thick the clust'ring vine, forth crept 325  
 The smelling gourd, up stood the corny reed  
 Embattl'd in her field, and th' humble shrub,  
 And bush with frizzed hair implicit : last  
 Rose as in dance the stately trees, and spread  
 Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemm'd 330  
 Their blossoms ; with high woods the hills were crown'd,  
 With tufts the valleys, and each fountain side,  
 With borders long the rivers, that earth now  
 Seem'd like to Heav'n, a seat where Gods might dwell  
 Or wander with delight, and love to haunt 335  
 Her sacred shades, though God had yet not rain'd  
 Upon the earth, and man to till the ground  
 None was, but from the earth a dewy mist  
 Went up and water'd all the ground, and each  
 Plant of the field, which ere it was in th' earth 340  
 God made, and every herb, before it grew  
 On the green stem. God saw that it was good :  
 So ev'n and morn recorded the third day.

“ Again th' Almighty spake, “ Let there be lights

High in th' expanse of Heav'n, to divide 345  
 The day from night ; and let them be for signs,  
 For seasons, and for days, and circling years,  
 And let them be for lights, as I ordain  
 Their office in the firmament of Heaven,  
 To give light on the earth : ' and it was so. 350  
 And God made two great lights, great for their use  
 To Man, the greater to have rule by day,  
 The less by night altern ; and made the stars,  
 And set them in the firmament of Heaven  
 'To illuminate the earth, and rule the day 355  
 In their vicissitude, and rule the night,  
 And light from darkness to divide. God saw,  
 Surveying his great work, that it was good :  
 For of celestial bodies first the sun  
 A mighty sphere he fram'd, unlightsome first, 360  
 Though of etherial mould ; then form'd the moon  
 Globose, and every magnitude of stars,  
 And sow'd with stars the Heav'n thick as a field.  
 Of light by far the greater part he took,  
 'Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd 365  
 In the sun's orb, made porous to receive  
 And drink the liquid light, firm to retain  
 Her gather'd beams, great palace now of light.  
 Hither, as to their fountain, other stars  
 Repairing, in their golden urns draw light 370  
 And hence the morning planet gilds her horns ;  
 By tincture or reflection they augment  
 Their small peculiar, though from human sight  
 So far remote, with diminution seen.  
 First in his east the glorious lamp was seen, 375  
 Regent of day, and all th' horizon round  
 Invested with bright rays, jocund to run  
 His longitude through Heav'n's high road ; the grey  
 Dawn, and the Pleiades before him danc'd  
 Shedding sweet influence. Less bright the moon, 380  
 But opposite in levell'd west was set  
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her light  
 From him, for other light she needed none

In that aspect, and still that distance keeps  
 Till night, then in the east her turn she shines, 385  
 Revolv'd on Heav'n's great axle, and her reign  
 With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,  
 With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd  
 Spangling the hemisphere. Then, first adorn'd  
 With her bright luminaries that set and rose, 390  
 Glad evening and glad morn crown'd the fourth day.  
 " And God said, ' Let the waters generate  
 Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul :  
 And let fowl fly above the earth, with wings  
 Display'd on the open firmament of Heaven.' 395  
 And God created the great whales, and each  
 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously  
 The waters generated by their kinds,  
 And every bird of wing after his kind ;  
 And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying, 400  
 ' Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas,  
 And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill ;  
 And let the fowl be multiply'd on th' earth.'  
 Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay,  
 With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals 405  
 Of fish, that with their fins and shining scales  
 Glide under the green wave, in sculls that oft  
 Bank the mid-sea : part single, or with mate,  
 Graze the sea-weed, their pasture, and thro' groves  
 Of coral stray, or sporting, with quick glance, 410  
 Show to the sun their wav'd coats dropt with gold ;  
 Or in their pearly shells at ease, attend  
 Moist nutriment, or under rocks their food  
 In jointed armour watch : on smooth the seal,  
 And bended dolphins, play ; part huge of bulk 415  
 Wallowing unwieldy', enormous in their gait,  
 Tempest the ocean. There leviathan,  
 Hugest of living creatures, on the deep,  
 Stretch'd like a promontory, sleeps or swims,  
 And seems a moving land, and at his gills 420  
 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out, a sea.  
 Meanwhile the tepid caves, and fens and shores,

Their brood as numerous hatch, from th' egg that soon,  
 Bursting with kindly rupture, forth disclos'd  
 Their callow young, but, feather'd soon and fledge, 425  
 They sumu'd their pens, and soaring th' air sublime,  
 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud  
 In prospect; there the eagle and the stork  
 On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build :  
 Part loosely wing the region, part more wise 430  
 In common, rang'd in figure wedge their way,  
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth  
 Their airy caravan high over seas  
 Flying, and over lands with mutual wing  
 Easing their flight : so steers the prudent crane 435  
 Her annual voyage, borne on winds; the air  
 Floats, as they pass. fann'd with unnumber'd plumes.  
 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song  
 Solac'd the woods, and spread their painted wings  
 Till even, nor then the solemn nightingale 440  
 Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft lays ;  
 Others on silver lakes and rivers bath'd  
 Their downy breast ; the swan, with arched neck  
 Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows  
 Her state with oary feet ; yet oft they quit 445  
 The dank, and, rising on stiff pennons, tower  
 The mid aerial sky. Others on ground  
 Walk'd firm ; the crested cock, whose clarion sounds  
 The silent hours, and th' other whose gay train  
 Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue 450  
 Of rainbows and starry eyes. The waters thus  
 With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,  
 Ev'ning and morn solemniz'd the fifth day.  
 "The sixth, and of creation last, arose  
 With evening harps and matin, when God said, 455  
 ' Let th' earth bring forth soul living in her kind,  
 Cattle and creeping things, and beast of th' earth,  
 Each in their kind.' The earth obey'd, and straight,  
 Opening her fertile womb, teem'd at a birth  
 Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms, 460  
 Limb'd and full grown ; out of the ground up rose,

As from his lair, the wild beast where he wons  
 In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den ;  
 Among the trees in pairs they rose they walk'd.  
 The cattle in the fields and meadows green : 465  
 Those rare and solitary, these in flocks  
 Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.  
 The grassy clods now calv'd, now half appear'd  
 The tawny lion; pawing to get free  
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bonds, 470  
 And rampant shakes his brinded mane ; the ounce,  
 The libbard, and the tiger, as the mole  
 Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw  
 In hillocks ; the swift stag from under ground  
 Bare up his branching head ; scarce from his mould 475  
 Behemoth, biggest born of earth, upheav'd  
 His vastness ; fleec'd the flocks and bleating rose,  
 As plants ; ambiguous between sea and land  
 The river horse and scaly crocodile.  
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground, 480  
 Insect or worm : those wav'd their limber fans  
 For wings, and smallest lineaments exact,  
 In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride,  
 With spots of gold and purple, azure and green ;  
 These as a line their long dimension drew, 485  
 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all  
 Minims of nature ; some of serpent kind,  
 Wondrous in length and corpulence, involv'd  
 Their snaky folds, and added wings. First crept  
 The parsimonious emmet, provident 490  
 Of future, in small room large heart enclos'd,  
 Pattern of just equality perhaps  
 Hereafter, join'd in her popular tribes  
 Of commonalty ; swarming next appear'd  
 The female bee, that feeds her husband drone 495  
 Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells  
 With honey stor'd. The rest are numberless,  
 And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them names,  
 Needless to thee repeated ; nor unknown  
 The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field, 500

Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes  
 And hairy mane terrific, though to thee  
 Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

“ Now Heav'n in all her glory shone, and roll'd  
 Her motions, as the great first Mover's hand 505  
 First wheel'd their course ; earth in her rich attire  
 Consummate lovely smil'd ; air, water, earth,  
 By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walk'd  
 Frequent : and of the sixth day yet remain'd ;  
 There wanted yet the master work, the end- 510  
 Of all yet done ; a creature who, not prone  
 And brute as other creatures, but endued  
 With sancity of reason, might erect  
 His stature, and upright, with front serene,  
 Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence 515  
 Magnanimous to correspond with Heaven,  
 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good  
 Descends, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes,  
 Directed in-devotion, to adore  
 And worship God supreme, who made him chief 520  
 Of all his works : therefore the Omnipotent  
 Eternal Father (for where is not he  
 Present?) thus to his Son audibly spake.

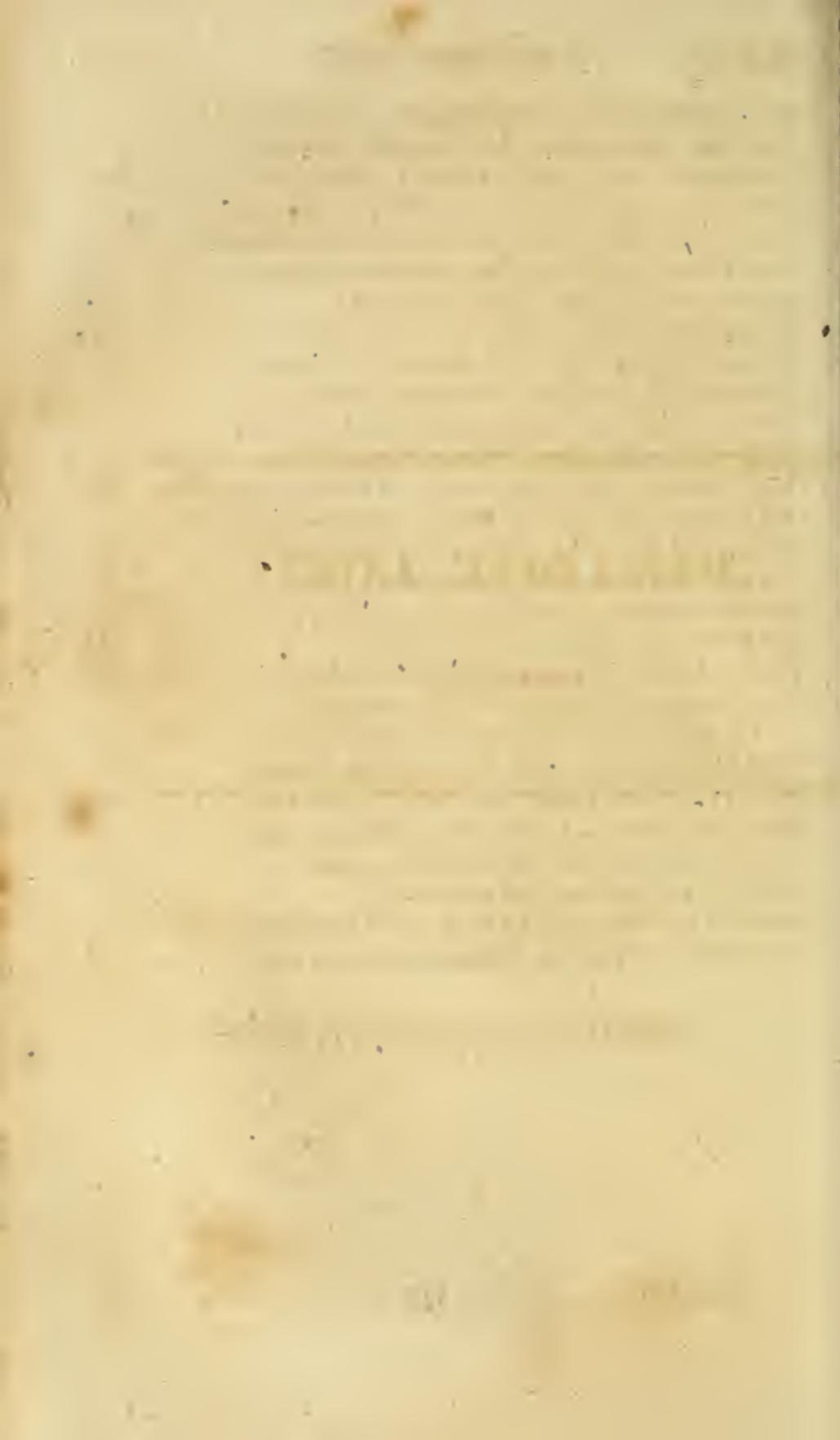
“ ‘ Let us make now Man in our image, Man  
 In our similitude, and let them rule 525  
 Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,  
 Beast of the field, and over all the earth,  
 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.’  
 This said, he form'd thee, Adam, thee, O Man,  
 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd 530  
 The breath of life : in his own image he  
 Created thee, in the image of God  
 Express, and thou becam'st a living soul.  
 Male he created thee, but thy consort  
 Female for race ; then bless'd mankind, and said, 535  
 Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth,  
 Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold  
 Over fish of the sea, and fowl of th' air,  
 And every living thing that moves on th' earth.

Wherever thus created, for no place 540  
 Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st,  
 He brought thee into this delicious grove,  
 This garden, planted with the trees of God,  
 Delectable both to behold and taste ;  
 And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 545  
 Gave thee ; all sorts are here that all the earth yields  
 Variety without end ; but of the tree,  
 Which tasted works knowledge of good and evil,  
 Thou may'st not ; in the day thou eat'st, thou dy'st ;  
 Death is the penalty impos'd, beware, 550  
 And govern well thy appetite, lest Sin  
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.  
 " Here finish'd he, and all that he had made  
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good ;  
 So even and morn accomplish'd the sixth day : 555  
 Yet not till the Creator from his work  
 Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd,  
 Up to the Heav'n of Heav'ns, his high abode,  
 Thence to behold this new-created world,  
 Th' addition of his empire, how it show'd 560  
 In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,  
 Answering his great idea. Up he rode,  
 Follow'd with acclamation and the sound  
 Symphonious of ten thousand harps that tun'd  
 Angelic harmonies : the earth, the air 565  
 Resounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heard'st)  
 The Heav'ns and all the constellations rung,  
 The planets in their station list'ning stood,  
 While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.  
 ' Open, ye everlasting gates,' they sung, 570  
 ' Open, ye Heav'ns, your living doors ; let in  
 The great Creator from his work return'd  
 Magnificent, his six days work, a world ;  
 Open, and henceforth oft ; for God will deign  
 To visit oft the dwellings of just men 575  
 Delighted, and with frequent intercourse  
 Thither will send his winged messengers  
 On errands of supernal grace.' So sung

The glorious train ascending: He through Heaven,  
 That open'd wide her blazing portals, led 580  
 To God's eternal house direct the way,  
 A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold  
 And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear,  
 Seen in the galaxy, that milky way,  
 Which nightly as a circling zone thou seest 585  
 Powder'd with stars. And now on earth the seventh  
 Evening arose in Eden, for the sun  
 Was set, and twilight from the east came on,  
 Forerunning night; when at the holy mount  
 Of Heav'n's high-seated top, th' imperial throne 590  
 Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure,  
 The Filial Pow'r arriv'd, and sat him down  
 With his great Father, for he also went  
 Invisible, yet stay'd, (such privilege  
 Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordain'd, 595  
 Author and end of all things, and from work  
 Now resting, bless'd and hallow'd the seventh day,  
 As resting on that day from all his work,  
 But not in silence holy kept; the harp  
 Had work and rested not, the solemn pipe, 600  
 And dulcimer, all organs of sweep stop,  
 All sounds on fret by string or golden wire,  
 Temper'd soft tunings intermix'd with voice  
 Choral or unison; of incense clouds  
 Fuming from golden censers hid the mount. 605  
 Creation and the six days acts they sung,  
 'Great are thy works, Jehovah, infinite  
 Thy pow'r; what thought can measure thee, or tongue  
 Relate thee? greater now in thy return 610  
 Than from the giant Angels; thee that day  
 Thy thunders magnify'd; but to create  
 Is greater than created, to destroy.  
 Who can impair thee mighty King, or bound  
 Thy empire? easily the proud attempt  
 Of Spi'rits apostate, and their counsels vain 615  
 Thou hast repell'd, while impiously they thought  
 Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw

The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks  
 To lessen thee, against his purpose serves  
 To manifest the more thy might : his evil 620  
 Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.  
 Witness this new made world, another Heaven  
 From Heav'n-gate not far, founded in view  
 On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea ;  
 Of amplitude almost immense, with stars 625  
 Numerous, and every star perhaps a world  
 Of destin'd habitation ; but thou know'st  
 Their seasons : among these the seat of Men,  
 Earth with her nether ocean circumfus'd,  
 Their pleasant dwelling-place. Thrice happy Men, 630  
 And sons of Men, whom God hath thus advanc'd,  
 Created in his image, there to dwell  
 And worship him, and in reward to rule  
 Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air,  
 And multiply a race of worshippers 635  
 Holy and just ; thrice happy if they know  
 Their happiness, and persevere upright.  
 " So sung they, and the empyréan rung  
 With Halleluiahs : thus was sabbath kept.  
 And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd 640  
 How first this world and face of things began,  
 And what before thy memory was done  
 From the beginning, that posterity  
 Inform'd by thee might know ; if else thou seek'st  
 Ought, not surpassing human measure, say." 645

END OF THE SEVENTH BOOK.



---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

BOOK VIII.

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

Adam enquires concerning celestial motions ; is doubtfully answered, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge : Adam assents, and, still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since his own creation, his placing in Paradise, his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society ; his first meeting and nuptials with Eve ; his discourse with the Angel thereupon, who, after admonitions repeated, departs.

# PARADISE LOST,

---

## BOOK VIII.

THE Angel ended, and in Adam's ear  
So charming left his voice, that he a while  
Thought him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear ;  
Then, as new-wak'd, thus gratefully, reply'd.  
“ What thanks sufficient, or what recompense 5  
Equal have I to render thee, divine  
Historian, who thus largely hast allay'd  
The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd  
This friendly condescension to relate  
Things else by me unsearchable, now heard 10  
With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,  
With glory attributed to the high  
Creator? Something yet of doubt remains,  
Which only thy solution can resolve.  
When I behold this goodly frame, this world, 15  
Of Heav'n and Earth consisting, and compute  
Their magnitudes, this earth a spot a grain,  
An atom, with the firmament compar'd  
And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll  
Spaces incomprehensible (for such 20  
Their distance argues and their swift return  
Diurnal), merely to officiate light  
Round this opacous earth, this punctual spot,  
One day and night, in all their vast survey  
Useless besides ; reasoning, I oft admire, 25  
How nature, wise and frugal, could commit  
Such disproportions, with superfluous hand  
So many nobler bodies to create,

Greater so manifold, to this one use,  
 For ought appears, and on their orbs impose 30  
 Such restless revolution, day by day  
 Repeated, while the sedentary earth,  
 That better might with far less compass move,  
 Serv'd by more noble than herself, attains 35  
 Her end without least motion, and receives,  
 As tribute, such a sumless journey brought,  
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light;  
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails."  
 So spake our sire, and by his count'nance seem'd  
 Ent'ring on studious thoughts abstruse, which Eve 40  
 Perceiving, where she sat retir'd in sight,  
 With lowliness majestic from her seat,  
 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,  
 Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flowers,  
 To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom, 45  
 Her nursery; they at her coming sprung,  
 And, touch'd by her fair tendance, gladlier grew.  
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse  
 Delighted, or not capable her ear  
 Of what was high: such pleasure she reserv'd, 50  
 Adam relating, she sole auditress;  
 Her husband the relator she preferr'd  
 Before the Angel, and of him to ask  
 Chose rather; he, she knew, would intermix  
 Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute 55  
 With conjugal caresses; from his lip  
 Not words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now  
 Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd?  
 With Goddess-like demeanour forth she went,  
 Not unattended, for on her as queen 60  
 A pomp of winning graces waited still,  
 And from about her shot darts of desire  
 Into all eyes to wish her still in sight.  
 And Raphael now, to Adam's doubt propos'd,  
 Benevolent and facile thus reply'd. 65  
 "To ask or search I blame thee not, for Heaven  
 Is as the book of God before thee set,

Wherein to read his wondrous works, and learn  
 His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years ;  
 This to attain, whether Heav'n move or Earth, 70  
 Imports not, if thou reckon right ; the rest  
 From Man or Angel the great Architect  
 Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge  
 His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought  
 Rather admire ; or if they list to try 75  
 Conjecture, he his fabric of the Heavens  
 Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move  
 His laughter at their quaint opinions wide  
 Hereafter, when they come to model Heaven  
 And calculate the stars, how they will wield 80  
 The mighty frame, how build, unbuild, contrive  
 To save appearances, how gird the sphere  
 With centric and excentric scribbled o'er,  
 Cycle and epicycle, orb in orb :  
 Already by thy reasoning this I guess 85  
 Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest  
 That bodies bright and greater should not serve  
 The less not bright, nor Heav'n such journies run,  
 Earth sitting still, when she alone receives  
 The benefit. Consider first, that great 90  
 Or bright infers not excellence : the earth  
 Though, in comparison of Heav'n, so small,  
 Nor glist'ring, may of solid good contain  
 More plenty than the sun that barren shines,  
 Whose virtue on itself works no effect, 95  
 But in the fruitful earth ; there, first receiv'd,  
 His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.  
 Yet not to earth are those bright luminaries  
 Officious, but to thee earth's habitant.  
 And for the Heav'n's wide circuit, let it speak 100  
 The Maker's high magnificence, who built  
 So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far ;  
 That man may know he dwells not in his own ;  
 An edifice too large for him to fill,  
 Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest 105  
 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.

The swiftness of those circles attribúte,  
 Though numberless, to his omnipotence,  
 That to corporeal substances could add  
 Speed almost spiritual: me thou think'st not slow, 110  
 Who since the morning hour set out from Heaven  
 Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd  
 In Eden, distance inexpressible  
 By numbers that have name. But this I urge,  
 Admitting motion in the Heavn's, to show 115  
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd ;  
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on earth.  
 God to remove his ways from human sense,  
 Plac'd Heav'n from Earth so far, that earthly sight, 120  
 If it presume, might err in things too high,  
 And no advantage gain. What if the sun  
 Be centre to the world, and other stars,  
 By his attractive virtne and their own  
 Incited, dance about him various rounds ? 125  
 Their wand'ring course now high, now low, then hid,  
 Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,  
 In six thou seest, and what if sev'nth to these  
 The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,  
 Insensibly three different motions move ? 130  
 Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,  
 Mov'd contrary with thwart obliquities,  
 Or save the sun his labour, and that swift  
 Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb suppos'd,  
 Invisible else above all stars, the wheel 135  
 Of day and night ; which needs not thy belief,  
 If earth, industrious of herself, fetch day  
 Travelling east, and with her part averse  
 From the sun's beam meet night, her other part  
 Still luminous by his ray. What if that light, 140  
 Sent from her through the wide, transpicious air,  
 To the terrestrial moon be as a star  
 Enlight'ning her by day, as she by night  
 This earth ? reciprocal, if land be there,  
 Fields and inhabitants. Her spots thou seest 145

As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce  
 Fruits in in her soften'd soil, for some to eat  
 Allotted there ; and other suns perhaps  
 With their attendant moons thou wilt descry  
 Communicating male and female light, 150  
 Which two great sexes animate the world,  
 Stor'd in each orb perhaps with some that live,  
 For such vast room in nature unpossess'd  
 By living soul, desert and desolate,  
 Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute 155  
 Each orb a glimpse of light convey'd so far  
 Down to this habitable, which returns  
 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
 But whether thus these things, or whether not,  
 Whether the sun predominant in Heaven 160  
 Rise on the earth, or earth rise on the sun,  
 He from the east his flaming road begin,  
 Or she from west her silent course advance  
 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps  
 On her soft axle, while she paces even, 165  
 And bears thee soft with the smooth air along,  
 Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,  
 Leave them to God above, him serve and fear ;  
 Of other creatures, as him pleases best,  
 Wherever plac'd, let him dispose : joy thou 170  
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise  
 And thy fair Eve ; Heav'n is for thee too high  
 To know what passes there ; be lowly wise :  
 Think only what concerns thee and thy being ;  
 Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there 175  
 Live, in what state, condition, or degree,  
 Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd,  
 Not of earth only, but of highest Heaven."

To whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, reply'd  
 " How fully hast thou satisfy'd me, pure 180  
 Intelligence of Heav'n, Angel serene,  
 And freed from intricacies, taught to live,  
 The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts  
 To interrupt the sweet of life, from which

God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares, 185  
 And not molest us, unless we ourselves  
 Seek them with wand'ring thoughts, and notions vain.  
 But apt the mind or fancy is to rove  
 Uncheck'd, and of her roving is no end ;  
 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn, 190  
 That not to know at large of things remote  
 From use, obscure, and subtle, but to know  
 That which before us lies in daily life,  
 Is the prime wisdom ; what is more, is fume,  
 O, emptiness, or fond impertinence, 195  
 And renders us in things that most concern  
 Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.  
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend  
 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand  
 Useful, whence haply mention may arise 200  
 Of something not unseasonable to ask  
 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.  
 Thee I have heard relating what was done  
 Ere my remembrance ; now hear me relate  
 My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard ; 205  
 And day is yet not spent ; till then thou seest  
 How subtly to detain thee I devise,  
 Inviting thee to hear while I relate,  
 Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply :  
 For while I sit with thee I seem in Heaven, 210  
 And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear  
 Than fruits of palm-tree pleasantest to thirst  
 And hunger both, from labour, at the hour  
 Of sweet repast ; they satiate, and soon fill  
 Though pleasant ; but thy words, with grace divine 215  
 Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety."

To whom thus Raphael answer'd heav'nly meek.  
 " Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of Men,  
 Nor tongue ineloquent ; for God on thee  
 Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd 220  
 Inward and outward both, his image fair :  
 Speaking or mute all comeliness and grace  
 Attends thee, and each word, each motion forms ;

Nor less think we in Heav'n of thee on Earth  
 Than of our fellow servant, and inquire 225  
 Gladly into the ways of God with Man ;  
 For God we see hath honour'd thee, and set  
 On man his equal love: say therefore on ;  
 For I that day was absent, as besel,  
 Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 220  
 Far on excursion tow'ard the gates of Hell ;  
 Squar'd in full legion (such command we had)  
 To see that none thence issued forth a spy,  
 Or enemy, while God was in his work,  
 Lest he, incens'd at such eruption bold, 235  
 Destruction with creation might have mix'd.  
 Not that they durst without his leave attempt,  
 But us he sends upon his high behests  
 For state, as Sov'reign King, and to inure  
 Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut 240  
 The dismal gates, and barricado'd strong ;  
 But long ere our approaching heard within  
 Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,  
 Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.  
 Glad we return'd up to the coast of light 245  
 Ere sabbath evening: so we had in charge.  
 But thy relation now ; for I attend,  
 Pleas'd with thy words no less than thou with mine."  
 So spake the Godlike Pow'r, and thus our sire.  
 "For man to tell how human life began 250  
 Is hard ; for who himself beginning knew?  
 Desire with thee still longer to converse  
 Induc'd me. As new wak'd from soundest sleep  
 Soft on the flow'ry herb I found me laid  
 In balmy sweat, which with his beams the sun 255  
 Soon dry'd, and on the reeking moisture fed,  
 Straight toward Heav'n my wond'ring eyes I turn'd,  
 And gaz'd a while the ample sky, till rais'd  
 By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,  
 As thitherward endeavouring, and upright 260  
 Stood on my feet ; about me round I saw  
 Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,

And liquid lapse of murm'ring streams ; by these,  
 Creatures that liv'd and mov'd, and walk'd, or flew,  
 Birds on the branches warbling ; all things smil'd : 265  
 With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.  
 Myself I then perus'd, and limb by limb  
 Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes rau  
 With supple joints, as lively vigour led :  
 But who I was, or where, or from what cause ; 270  
 Knew not ; to speak I try'd, and forthwith spake :  
 My tongue obey'd, and readily could name  
 Whate'er I saw. ' Thou Sun,' said I, ' fair light,  
 And thou enlighten'd Earth, so fresh and gay,  
 Ye Hills and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plains, 275  
 And ye that live and move, fair Creatures tell,  
 Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here ?  
 Not of myself ; by some great Maker then,  
 In goodness and in pow'r pre-eminent ;  
 Tell me how may I know him, how adore, 280  
 From whom I have that thus I move and live,  
 And feel that I am happier than I know.'  
 While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,  
 From where I first drew air, and first beheld  
 This happy light, when answer none return'd, 285  
 On a green shady bank, profuse of flowers,  
 Pensive I sat me down ; there gentle sleep  
 First found me, and with soft oppression seiz'd  
 My droused sense, untroubled, though I thought  
 I then was passing to my former state 290  
 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve :  
 When suddenly stood at my head a dream,  
 Whose inward apparition gently mov'd  
 My fancy to believe I yet had being, 294  
 And liv'd. One came, methought, of shape divine,  
 And said, ' Thy mansion wants thee, Adam, rise,  
 First Man, of men innumerable ordain'd  
 First Father, call'd by thee I come thy guide  
 To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd.'  
 So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd, 300  
 And over fields and waters, as in air

Smooth sliding without step, last led me up  
 A woody mountain; whose high top was plain,  
 A circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest trees  
 Planted, with walks, and bow'rs, that what I saw 305  
 Of earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree  
 Loaden with fairest fruit, that hung to th' eye  
 Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite  
 To pluck and eat: whereat I wak'd, and found  
 Before mine eyes all real, as the dream 310  
 Had lively shadow'd. Here had new begun  
 My wandering, had not he who was my guide  
 Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,  
 Presence divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,  
 In adoration at his feet I fell 315  
 Submiss: he rear'd me, and 'Whom thou sought'st I am,'  
 Said mildly, 'Author of all this thou seest  
 Above, or round about thee, or beneath.  
 This Paradise I give thee, count it thine  
 To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat: 320  
 Of every tree that in the garden grows  
 Eat freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth;  
 But of the tree whose operation brings  
 Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set  
 The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith, 325  
 Amid the garden by the tree of life,  
 Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,  
 And shun the bitter consequence: for know,  
 The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command  
 Transgress'd, inevitably thou shalt die, 330  
 From that day mortal, and this happy state  
 Shalt lose, expell'd from hence into a world  
 Of woe and sorrow. Sternly he pronounc'd  
 The rigid interdiction which resounds  
 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice 335  
 Not to incur; but soon his clear aspect  
 Return'd, and gracious purpose thus renew'd.  
 'Not only these fair bounds, but all the earth

- To thee and to thy race I give ; as lords  
 Possess it, and all things that therein live, 340  
 Or live in sea, or air, beast, fish, and fowl.  
 In sign whereof each bird and beast behold  
 After their kinds ; I bring them to receive  
 From thee their names, and pay thee fealty  
 With low subjection ; understand the same 345  
 Of fish within their wat'ry residence,  
 Not hither summon'd, since they cannot change  
 Their element to draw the thinner air.  
 As thus he spake, each bird and beast behold  
 Approaching two and two, these cower'd low 350  
 With blandishment, each bird stoop'd on his wing.  
 I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood  
 Their nature, with such knowledge God endued  
 My sudden apprehension : but in these  
 I found not what methought I wanted still ; 355  
 And to the heav'nly vision thus presum'd.
- “ O by what name, for thou above all these,  
 Above mankind, or ought than mankind higher,  
 Surpassest far my naming, how may I  
 Adore thee, Author of this universe, 360  
 And all this good to man ? for whose well being  
 So amply, and with hands so liberal,  
 Thou hast provided all things : but with me  
 I see not who partakes. In solitude  
 What happiness, who can enjoy alone, 365  
 Or all enjoying, what contentment find ?  
 Thus I presumptuous ; and the vision bright,  
 As with a smile more brighten'd, thus reply'd.
- “ What call'st thou solitude ? is not the earth  
 With various living creatures, and the air, 370  
 Replenish'd and all these at thy command  
 To come and play before thee ? know'st thou not  
 Their language and their ways ? they also know,  
 And reason not contemptibly ; with these  
 Find pastime, and bear rule ; thy realm is large.' 375  
 So spake the universal Lord, and seem'd

So ord'ring. I with leave of speech implor'd,  
And humble deprecation, thus reply'd.

“ Let not my words offend thee, heav'nly Power,  
My Maker be propitious while I speak. 380

Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,  
And these inferior far beneath me set ?

Among unequals what society

Can sort, what harmony or true delight ?

Which must be mutual, in proportion due 385

Giv'n and receiv'd ; but in disparity,

The one intense, the other still remiss,

Can not well suit with either, but soon prove

Tedious alike : of fellowship I speak

Such as I seek, fit to participate 390

All rational delight, wherein the brute

Cannot be human consort ; they rejoice

Each with their kind, lion with lioness ;

So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd ;

Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl 395

So well converse, nor with the ox the ape ;

Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.

Whereto th' Almighty answer'd not displeas'd.

“ A nice and subtle happiness I see

Thou to thyself proposes, in the choice 400

Of thy associates, Adam, and will taste

No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.

What think'st thou then of me, and this my state ?

Seem I to thee sufficiently possess'd

Of happiness, or not ? who am alone 405

From all eternity, for none I know

Second to me or like, equal much less.

How have I then with whom to hold converse,

Save with the creatures which I made, and those

To me inferior, infinite descents 410

Beneath what other creatures are to thee ?

“ He ceas'd, I lowly answer'd. “ To attain

The height and depth of thy eternal ways

All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things ;

Thou in thyself art perfect, and in thee 415  
 Is no deficiency found ; not so is Man,  
 But in degree, the cause of his desire,  
 By conversation with his like, to help  
 Or solace his defects. No need that thou  
 Shouldst propagate, already infinite, 420  
 And through all numbers absolute, though one ;  
 But Man by number is to manifest  
 His single imperfection, and beget  
 Like of his like, his image multiply'd,  
 In unity defective, which requires 425  
 Collateral love, and dearest amity.  
 Thou in thy secrecy, although alone,  
 Best with thyself accompanied, seek'st not  
 Social communication, yet, so pleas'd,  
 Canst raise thy creature to what height thou wilt 430  
 Of union or communion, deify'd ;  
 I by conversing cannot these erect  
 From prone, nor in their ways complacence find.'  
 Thus I embolden'd spake, and freedom us'd  
 Permissive, and acceptance found, which gain'd 435  
 This answer from the gracious voice divine.  
 " ' Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd,  
 And find thee knowing not of beasts alone,  
 Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thyself,  
 Expressing well the spi'rit within thee free, 440  
 My image, not imparted to the brute,  
 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee  
 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike,  
 And be so minded still ; I, ere thou spak'st,  
 Knew it not good for man to be alone, 445  
 And no such company as then thou saw'st  
 Intended thee, for trial only brought,  
 To see how thou couldst judge of fit and meet.  
 What next I bring shall please thee be assur'd  
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 450  
 Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.'  
 " He ended, or I heard no more, for now

My earthly by his heav'nly overpowr'd,  
Which it had long stood under, strain'd to th' height  
In that celestial colouy sublime, 455  
As with an object that excels the sense,  
Dazzled and spent, sunk down, and sought repair  
Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd  
By nature as in aid, and clos'd mine eyes.  
Mine eyes he clos'd, but open left the cell 460  
Of fancy, my internal sight, by which  
Abstract, as in a trance, methought I saw,  
Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape  
Still glorious before whom awake I stood ;  
Who, stooping, open'd my left side, and took 465  
From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,  
And life-blood streaming fresh ; wide was the wound.  
But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd :  
The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands ;  
Under his forming hands a creature grew, 470  
Manlike, but different sex so lovely fair,  
That what seem'd fair in all the world, seem'd now  
Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd  
And in her looks, which from that time infus'd  
Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before, 475  
And into all things from her air inspir'd  
The spirit of love and amorous delight.  
She disappear'd, and left me dark ; I wak'd  
To find her or for ever to deplore  
Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure : 480  
When out of hope, behold her, not far off,  
Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd  
With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow  
To make her amiable. On she came,  
Led by her heav'nly Maker, though unseen, 485  
And guided by his voice, nor uninform'd  
Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites :  
Grace was in all her steps, Heav'n in her eye,  
In every gesture dignity and love.  
I overjoy'd could not forbear aloud. 490

“ ‘ This turn hath made amends ; thou hast fulfil’d  
 Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign,  
 Giver of all things fair, but fairest this  
 Of all thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see  
 Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself  
 Before me ; Woman is her name, of Man  
 Extracted : for this cause he shall forego  
 Father and mother, and to’ his wife adhere ;  
 And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.’

495

“ She heard me thus, and tho’ divinely brought

500

Yet innocence and virgin modesty,  
 Her virtue and the conscience of her worth,  
 That would be woo’d, and not unsought be won,  
 Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir’d,  
 The more desirable, or to say all,

505

Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,  
 Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn’d :

I follow’d her ; she what was honour knew,  
 And with obsequious majesty approv’d

My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower  
 I led her blushing like the morn : all Heaven,

510

And happy constellations, on that hour  
 Shed their selectest influence ; the earth

Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill ;  
 Joyous the birds ; fresh gales and gentle airs

515

Whisper’d it to the woods, and from their wings  
 Flung rose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,

Disporting, till the amorous bird of night  
 Sung spousal, and bid haste the evening star

On his hill top, to light the bridal lamp.

520

“ ‘ Thus have I told thee all my state, and brought  
 My story to the sum of earthly bliss

Which I enjoy, and must confess to find

In all things else delight indeed, but such

As, us’d or not, works in the mind no change,

525

Nor vehement desire, these delicacies

I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flowers,

Walks, and the melody of birds ; but here

Far otherwise, transported I behold,  
 Transported touch; here passion first I felt, 530  
 Commotion strange, in all enjoyment else  
 Superior and unmov'd, here only weak  
 Against the charm of beauty's pow'ful glance.  
 Or nature failed in me, and left some part  
 Not proof enough such object to sustain, 535  
 Or from my side subducting, took perhaps  
 More than enough; at least on her bestow'd  
 Too much of ornament, in outward show  
 Elaborate, of inward less exact.  
 For well I understand in the prime end 540  
 Of nature her th' inferior, in the mind  
 And inward faculties, which most excel,  
 In outward also her resembling less  
 His image who made both, and less expressing  
 The charaoter of that dominion given, 545  
 O'er other creatures; yet when I approach  
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems,  
 And in herself complete, so well to know  
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say  
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best; 550  
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls  
 Degraded, wisdom in discourse with her  
 Loses discount'nanc'd, and like folly shows;  
 Authority and reason on her wait,  
 As one intended first, not after made 555  
 Occasionally; and, to consummate all,  
 Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat  
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe  
 About her, as a guard angelic plac'd."

To whom the Angel with contracted brow. 560  
 "Accuse not nature, she had done her part;  
 Do thou but thine, and be not diffident  
 Of wisdom; she deserts thee not, if thou  
 Dismiss not her, when most thou need'st her nigh,  
 By attributing over much to things 565  
 Less excellent, as thou thyself perceiv'st.

For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,  
 An outside? fair no doubt, and worthy well  
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,  
 Not thy subjection: weigh with her thyself; 570  
 Then value. Oft-times nothing profits more  
 Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right  
 Well manag'd; of that skill the more thou know'st,  
 The more she will acknowledge thee her head,  
 And to realities yield all her shows: 575  
 Made so adorn for thy delight the more;  
 So awful, that with honour thou may'st love  
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.  
 But if the sense of touch, whereby mankind  
 Is propagated, seem such dear delight 580  
 Beyond all other, think the same vouchsaf'd  
 To cattle and each beast; which would not be  
 To them made common and divulg'd, if ought  
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue  
 The soul of man, or passion in him move. 585  
 What high'er in her society thou find'st  
 Attractive, human, rational, love still;  
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,  
 Wherein true love consists not: love refines  
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his seat 590  
 In rea'son, and is judicious, is the scale  
 By which to heav'nly love thou may'st ascend;  
 Not sunk in carnal pleasure, for which cause  
 Among the beasts no mate for thee was found."  
 To whom thus, half-abash'd, Adam reply'd. 595  
 "Neither her outside form'd so fair, nor ought  
 In procreation common to all kinds  
 (Though higher of the genial bed by far,  
 And with mysterious reverence I deem),  
 So much delights me, as those graceful acts, 600  
 Those thousand decencies that daily flow  
 From all her words and actions, mix'd with love  
 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd  
 Union of mind, or in us both one soul;

Harmony to behold in wedded pair 605  
 More grateful than harmonious sound to th' ear,  
 Yet these subject not ; I to thee disclose  
 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd,  
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense  
 Variously representing ; yet still free, 610  
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.  
 To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou say'st  
 Leads up to Heaven, is both the way and guide :  
 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask ;  
 Love not the heav'nly Spi'rits, and how their love 615  
 Express they, by looks only', or do they mix  
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?"  
 To whom the Angel, with a smile that glow'd  
 Celestial rosy red love's proper hue,  
 Answer'd. " Let it suffice thee that thou know'st  
 Us happy,' and without love no happiness. 621  
 Whatever pure thou in the body' enjoy'st  
 (And pure thou wert created) we enjoy  
 In eminence, and obstacle find none  
 Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars ; 625  
 Easier than air with air, if Spi'rits embrace,  
 Total they mix, union of pure with pure  
 Desiring ; nor restrain'd conveyance need  
 As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.  
 But I can now no more ; the parting sun 630  
 Beyond the earth's green Cape and verdant Isles  
 Hesperian sets, my signal to depart.  
 Be strong, live happy', and love, but first of all  
 Him whom to love is to obey, and keep  
 His great command ; take heed lest passion sway 635  
 Thy judgment to do ought, which else free will  
 Would not admit : thine and all thy sons  
 The weal or woe in thee is plac'd ; beware.  
 I thy persevering shall rejoice,  
 And all the Blest : stand fast ; to stand or fall 640  
 Free in thine own arbitrement it lies.  
 Perfect within, no outward aid require ;  
 And all temptation to transgress repel."

So saying, he arose ; whom Adam thus  
Follow'd with benediction. " Since to part, 645  
Go, heav'nly Guest, ethereal Messenger,  
Sent from whose sov'reign goodness I adore.  
Gentle to me and affable hath been  
Thy condescension, and shall be' honour'd ever  
With grateful memory : thou to mankind 650  
Be good and friendly still, and oft return."  
So parted they ; the Angel up to Heaven  
From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower.

END OF THE EIGHTH BOOK.

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

**BOOK IX.**

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

Satan, having compassed the Earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist, by night, into Paradise ; enters into the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart. Adam consents not, alleging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarned, should attempt her found alone. Eve, loth to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength : Adam at last yields. The serpent finds her alone ; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech and such understanding not till now : The serpent answer, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both. Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the tree of knowledge forbidden. The Serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat : she, pleased with the taste, deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam or not ; at last brings him of the fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof. Adam, at first, amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves, through vehemence of love, to perish with her ; and, extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit. The effects thereof in them both : they seek to cover their nakedness ; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK IX.

No more of talk, where God or Angel guest  
With Man, as with his friend, familiar us'd  
To sit indulgent, and with him partake  
Rural repast, permitting him the while  
Venial discourse unblam'd : I now must change 5  
Those notes to tragic ; foul distrust, and breach  
Disloyal, on the part of Man, revolt,  
And disobedience ; on the part of Heaven,  
Now alienated, distance and distate,  
Anger and just rebuke, and judgment giv'n, 10  
That brought into this world a world of woe,  
Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery,  
Death's harbinger. Sad task ! yet argument  
Not less, but more heroic, than the wrath  
Of stern Achilles on his foe pursu'd, 15  
Thrice fugitive, about Troy wall ; or rage  
Of Furnus for Lavinia disespous'd ;  
Or Neptune's ire, or Juno's, that so long  
Perplex'd the Greek and Cytherea's Son ;  
If answerable style I can obtain 20  
Of my celestial patroness, who deigns  
Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,  
And dictates to me slumb'ring, or inspires  
Easy my unpremeditated verse :  
Since first this subject for heroic song 25  
Pleas'd me, long choosing, and beginning late ;  
Not sedulous by nature to indite  
Wars, hitherto the only argument.

Heroic deem'd, chief mast'ry to dissect,  
 With long and tedious havock, fabled knights 30  
 In battles feign'd ; the better fortitude  
 Of patience and heroic martyrdom  
 Unsung ; or to describe races and games,  
 Of tilting furniture, emblazon'd shields,  
 Impresses quaint, caparisons and steeds ; 35  
 Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights  
 At joust and tournament ; then marshall'd feast  
 Serv'd up in hall with sewers, and seneshals ;  
 The skill of artifice or office mean,  
 Not that which justly gives heroic name 40  
 To person or to poem. Me of these  
 Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument  
 Remains, sufficient of itself to raise  
 That name, unless an age too late, or cold  
 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing 45  
 Depress'd ; and much they may, if all be mine,  
 Not her's who brings it nightly to my ear.  
 The sun was sunk, and after him the star  
 Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring  
 Twilight upon the earth, short arbiter 50  
 Twixt day and night ; and now from end to end  
 Night's hemisphere had veil'd th' horizon round :  
 When Satan, who late fled before the threats  
 Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improv'd  
 In meditated fraud and malice, bent 55  
 On Man's destruction, maugre what might hap  
 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.  
 By night he fled, and at midnight return'd  
 From compassing the earth, cautious of day  
 Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descry'd 60  
 His entrance, and forewarn'd the Cherubim  
 That kept their watch ; thence, full of anguish driven,  
 The space of sev'n continued nights he rode  
 With darkness, thrice the equinoctial line  
 He circled, four times cross'd the car of night 65  
 From pole to pole, trav'rsing each colúre ;  
 On th' eighth return'd, and on the coast, averse

From entrance or Cherubic watch, by stealth  
 Found unsuspected way. There was a place,  
 Now not, tho' sin, not time, first wrought the change, 70  
 Where Tigris at the foot of Paradise  
 Into a gulf shot under ground, till part  
 Rose up a fountain by tree of life :  
 In with the rivers sunk, and with it rose  
 Satan involv'd in rising mist, then sought 75  
 Where to lie hid ; sea he had search'd, and land,  
 From Eden over Pontus, and the pool  
 Mæotis, up beyond the river Ob ;  
 Downward as far antarctic ; and in length  
 West from Orontes to the ocean barr'd 80  
 At Darien, thence to the land where flows  
 Ganges and Indus. Thus the orb he roam'd  
 With narrow search, and, with inspection deep,  
 Consider'd every creature, which of all  
 Most opportune might serve his wiles and found 85  
 The serpent subtlest beast of all the field.  
 Him, after long debate, irresolute  
 Of thoughts resolv'd, his final sentence chose  
 Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom  
 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90  
 From sharpest sight : for in the wily snake,  
 Whatever sleights, none would suspicious mark,  
 As from his wit and native subtlety  
 Proceeding, which in other beasts observ'd,  
 Doubt might beget of diabolic power 95  
 Active within, beyond the sense of brute.  
 Thus he resolv'd ; but first, from inward grief,  
 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd.  
 " O Earth, how like to Heav'n, if not preferr'd  
 More justly, seat worthier of Gods, as built 100  
 With second thoughts, reforming what was old !  
 For what God after better worse would build ?  
 Terrestrial Heav'n, danc'd round by other Heavens  
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,  
 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems, 16  
 In thee concentrating all their precious beams

Of sacred influence! As God in Heaven  
 Is centre, yet extends to all, so thou  
 Centring receiv'st from all those orbs; in thee,  
 Not in themselves, all their known virtue' appears 110  
 Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth  
 Of creatures animate with gradual life  
 Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in Man.  
 With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,  
 If I could joy in ought, sweet interchange 115  
 Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,  
 Now land, now sea, and shores with forests crown'd,  
 Rocks, dens, and caves! But I in none of these  
 Find place or refuge; and the more I see  
 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120  
 Torment within me', as from the hateful siege  
 Of contraries; all good to me becomes  
 Bane, and in Heav'n much worse would be my state,  
 But neither here seek I, no nor in Heav'n,  
 To dwell, unless by mast'ring Heav'n's Supreme; 125  
 Nor hope to be myself less miserable  
 By what I seek, but others to, make such.  
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound:  
 For only in destroying I find ease.  
 To my relentless thoughts; and him destroy'd, 130  
 Or won to what may work his utter loss,  
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon  
 Follow, as to him link'd in weak or woe,  
 In woe then; that destruction wide may range.  
 To me shall be the glory sole among 135  
 Th' infernal Pow'rs, in one day to have marr'd  
 What he Almighty styl'd, six nights and days  
 Continued making, and who knows how long  
 Before had been contriving, though perhaps  
 Not longer than since I in one night freed 140  
 From servitude inglorious well nigh half  
 Th' angelic name, and thinner left the throng  
 Of his adorers: he to be aveng'd,  
 And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,  
 Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd 145

More Angels to create, if they at least  
 Are his created, or to spite us more,  
 Determin'd to advance into our room  
 A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,  
 Exalted from so base original, 150  
 With heav'nly spoils, our spoils. What he decreed  
 He' effected; Man he made, and for him built  
 Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,  
 Him lord pronounc'd, and, O indignity!  
 Subjected to his service Angel wings, 155  
 And flaming ministers, to watch and tend  
 Their earthly charge: of these the vigilance  
 I dread, and to elude, thus wrapt in mist  
 Of midnight vapour, glide obscure, and pry  
 In every bush and brake, where apt may find 160  
 The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds  
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.  
 O foul descent! that I who erst contended  
 With Gods to sit the high'est, am now constrain'd  
 Into a beast, and mix'd with bestial slime, 165  
 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,  
 That to the height of deity aspir'd;  
 But what will not ambition and revenge  
 Descend to? who aspires must down as low  
 As high he soar'd, obnoxious first or last 170  
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,  
 Bitter ere long back on itself recoils:  
 Let it; I reckon not, so it light well aim'd,  
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next  
 Provokes my envy, this new fav'rite 175  
 Of Heav'n, this man of clay, son of despite,  
 Whom us the more to spite his Maker rais'd  
 From dust. Spite then with spite is best repaid."  
 So saying, through each thicket, dank or dry,  
 Like a black mist low creeping, he held on 180  
 His midnight search, where soonest he might find  
 The serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found  
 In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,  
 His head the midst, well stor'd with subtle wiles.

- Not yet in in horrid shade or dismal den 185  
 Nor nocent yet, but on the grassy herb  
 Fearless, unfeard he slept ; in at his mouth  
 The devil enter'd, and his brutal sense,  
 In heart or head, possessing, soon inspir'd  
 With act intelligential ; but his sleep 190  
 Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of morn.  
 Now, when as sacred light began to dawn  
 In Eden, on the humid flow'rs, that breath'd  
 Their morning incense, when all things that breathe  
 From the earth's great altar send up silent praise 195  
 To the Creator, and his nostrils fill  
 With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,  
 And join'd their vocal worship to the quire  
 Of creatures wanting voice ; that done, partake  
 The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs 200  
 Then commune how that day they best may ply  
 Their growing work ; for much their work outgrew  
 The hands dispatch of two gard'ning so wide,  
 And Eve first to her husband thus began  
 " Adam, well may we labour still to dress 205  
 This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flower,  
 Our pleasant task enjoind, but till more hands  
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,  
 Luxurious by restraint ; what we by day  
 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind, 210  
 One night or two with wanton growth derides,  
 Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,  
 Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present ;  
 Let us divide our labours, thou where choice  
 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind 215  
 The woodbine round this arbour or direct  
 The clasping ivy where to climb, while I,  
 In yonder spring of roses intermix'd  
 With myrtle, find what to redress till noon :  
 For while so near each other thus all day 220  
 Our task we choose, what wonder if so near  
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new  
 Casual discourse draw on, which intermits

Our day's work, brought to little, though begun  
 Early, and th' hour of supper comes unearn'd." 225  
 To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd.  
 " Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond  
 Compare above all living creatures dear,  
 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts employ'd  
 How we might best fulfil the work which here 230  
 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass  
 Unprais'd ; for nothing lovelier can be found  
 In woman, than to study household good,  
 And good works in her husband to promote.  
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd 235  
 Labour, as to debar us when we need  
 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between;  
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse  
 Of looks and smiles ; for smiles from reason flow,  
 To brute deny'd, and are of love the food, 240  
 Love not the lowest end of human life.  
 For not to irksome toil, but to delight,  
 He made us, and delight to reason join'd,  
 These paths and bow'rs doubt not but our joint hands  
 Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide 245  
 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long  
 Assist us : but if much converse perhaps  
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield ;  
 For solitude sometimes is best society,  
 And short retirement urges sweet return. 250  
 But other doubt possesses me, lest harm  
 Befall thee sever'd from me ! for thou know'st  
 What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe,  
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own  
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame 255  
 By sly assault ; and somewhere nigh at hand  
 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope, to find  
 His wish and best advantage, us assunder,  
 Hopeless to circumvent, us join'd, where each  
 To other speedy aid might lend at need ; 260  
 Whether his first design be to withdraw

Our fealty from God, or to disturb  
 Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss  
 Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more ;  
 Or this or worse, leave not the faithful side 265  
 That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects :  
 The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,  
 Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,  
 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures."

To whom the virgin majesty of Eve,  
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,  
 With sweet austere composure thus reply'd. 270

" Offspring of Heav'n and Earth, and all Earth's Lord,  
 That such an enemy we have, who seeks  
 Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn, 275  
 And from the parting Angel overheard,  
 As in a shady nook I stood behind,  
 Just then return'd at shut of evening flowers.

But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt  
 To God or thee, because we have a foe 280  
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.  
 His violence thou fear'st not being such  
 As we, not capable of death or pain,  
 Can either not receive, or can repel.

His fraud is then thy fear, which plain infers 285  
 Thy equal fear that my firm faith and love  
 Can by his fraud be shaken or seduc'd ;  
 Thoughts which how sound they harbour in thy breast,  
 Adam, misthought of her to thee so dear?"

To whom with healing words Adam reply'd. 290  
 " Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve,  
 For such thou art from sin and blame entire ;  
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade

Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid  
 Th' attempt itself, intended by our foe. 295  
 For he who tempts, though' in vain, at least asperes  
 The tempted with dishonour soul suppos'd  
 Not incorruptible of faith, not proof  
 Against temptation : thou thyself with scorn

And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong,  
 Though ineffectual found ; misdeem not then,  
 If such affront I labour to avert

From thee alone, which on us both at once  
 The enemy though bold, will hardly dare,  
 Or daring, first on me th' assault shall light. 305

Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn ;  
 Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce  
 Angels ; nor think superfluous others aid.  
 I from the influence of thy looks receive  
 Access in every virtue, in thy sight 310

More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were,  
 Of outward strength ; while shame, thou looking on,  
 Shame to be overcome or over-reach'd  
 Would utmost vigour raise, and rais'd unite.  
 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel 315  
 When I am present, and thy trial choose  
 With me, best witness of thy virtue try'd ?"

So spake domestic Adam in his care  
 And matrimonial love ; but Eve, who thought  
 Less attributed to her faith sincere, 320  
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd.

" If this be our condition, thus to dwell  
 In narrow circuit straiten'd by a foe,  
 Subtle or violent, we not endued 325

Single with like defence, wherever met,  
 How are we happy, still in fear of harm ?  
 But harm precedes not sin ; only our foe  
 Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem  
 Of our integrity ; his foul esteem

Sticks no dishonour on our front ; but turns 330  
 Foul on himself : then wherefore shunn'd or fear'd  
 By us ? who rather double honour gain  
 From his surmise prov'd false, find peace within,  
 Favour from Heav'n, our witness from th' event.

And what is faith, love, virtue, unassay'd 335  
 Alone, without exterior help sustain'd ?  
 Let us not then suspect our happy state  
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,

As not secure to single or combin'd.  
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so, 340  
 And Eden were no Eden thus expos'd."  
 To whom thus Adam fervently reply'd.  
 " O Woman, best are all things as the will  
 Of God ordain'd them ; his creating hand  
 Nothing imperfect or deficient left 345  
 Of all that he created much less Man,  
 Or ought that might his happy state secure,  
 Secure from outward force ; within himself  
 The danger lies, yet lies within his power :  
 Against his will he can receive no harm. 350  
 But God left free the will ; for what obeys  
 Reason is free, and reason he made right,  
 But bid her well beware, and still erect,  
 Lest, by some fair appearing good surpris'd,  
 She dictate false, and misinform the will 355  
 To do what God expressly hath forbid.  
 Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins,  
 That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.  
 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve,  
 Since reason not impossibly may meet 360  
 Some specious object by the foe suborn'd,  
 And fall into deception unaware,  
 Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.  
 Seek not temptation then, which to avoid  
 Were better, and most likely if from me 365  
 Thou sever not : trial will come unsought.  
 Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve  
 First thy obedience ; th' other who can know,  
 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest ?  
 But if thou think trial unsought may find 370  
 Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,  
 Go ; for thy stay, not free absents thee more ;  
 Go in thy native innocence, rely  
 On what thou hast of virtue, summon all, 374  
 For God tow'ard thee hath done his part, do thine."  
 So spake the patriarch of mankind ; but Eve  
 Persisted, yet submit, though last, reply'd.

"With thy permission, then, and thus forewarn'd,  
 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words  
 Touch'd only, that our trial when least sought, 380  
 May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd,  
 The willinger I go, nor much expect  
 A foe so proud will first the weaker seek ;  
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse."

Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand 385  
 Soft she withdrew, and, like a Wood-Nymph light,  
 Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's train,  
 Betook her to the groves, but Delia's self  
 In gait surpass'd, and Goddess-like deport,  
 Though not as she with bow and quiver arm'd, 390  
 But with such gard'ning tools as art yet rude,  
 Guiltless of fire, had form'd, or Angels brought.  
 To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorn'd,  
 Likest she seem'd, Pomona when she fled  
 Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her prime, 395  
 Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove.  
 Her long with ardent look his eye pursu'd  
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay.  
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return  
 Repeated, she to him as oft engag'd 400  
 To be return'd by noon amid the bower,  
 And all things in best order to invite  
 Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.  
 O much deceiv'd, much failing, hapless Eve,  
 Of thy presum'd return! event perverse! 405  
 Thou never from that hour in Paradise  
 Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose ;  
 Such ambush hid among sweet flow'rs and shades  
 Waited with hellish rancour imminent  
 To intercept thy way, or send thee back 410  
 Despoil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliss.  
 For now, and since first break of dawn, the Fiend,  
 Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,  
 And on his quest, where likeliest he might find,  
 The only two of mankind, but in them 415  
 The whole included race, his purpos'd prey.

In bow'r and field he sought, where any tuft  
 Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,  
 Their tendance or plantation for delight ;  
 By fountain or by shady rivulet 420  
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find  
 Eve separate ; he wish'd, but not with hope  
 Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,  
 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,  
 Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood, 425  
 Half spy'd, so thick the roses bushing round  
 About her glow'd, oft stooping to support  
 Each flow'r of slender stalk, whose head, tho' gay  
 Carnation, purple, azure, or speck'd with gold,  
 Hung drooping unsustain'd ; them she upstays 430  
 Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while  
 Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,  
 From her best prop so far, and storms so nigh.  
 Nearer he drew, and many a walk travérs'd  
 Of statliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm, 435  
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen,  
 Among thick-woven arborets and flowers  
 Imborder'd on each bank, the hand of Eve :  
 Spot more delicious than those gardens feign'd  
 Or of reviv'd Adonis, or renown'd 440  
 Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son,  
 Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king  
 Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.  
 Much he the place admir'd, the person more.  
 As one who, long in populous city pent, 445  
 Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air,  
 Forth issuing on a summer's morn to breathe  
 Among the pleasant villages and farms  
 Adjoin'd, from each thing met conceives delight,  
 The smell of grain, or tedded grass, or kine, 450  
 Of dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound ;  
 If chance with nymph-like step fair virgin pass,  
 What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more,  
 She most, and in her look sums all delight :  
 Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold 455

This flow'ry plat, the sweet recess of Eve  
 Thus early, thus alone; her heav'nly form  
 Angelic, but more soft, and feminine,  
 Her graceful innocence, her every air  
 Of gesture, or least action, overaw'd 460  
 His malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd  
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:  
 That space the Evil one abstracted stood  
 From his own ev'il, and for the time remain'd  
 Stupidly good, of enmity disarm'd, 465  
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge;  
 But the hot Hell that always in him burns,  
 'I hough in mid Heav'n, soon ended his delight,  
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees  
 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd: then soon 470  
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts  
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites,

"Thoughts, whither have ye led me? with what sweet  
 Compulsion thus transported to forget  
 What hither brought us! hate, not love, nor hope 475  
 Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste  
 Of Pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,  
 Save what is in destroying; other joy  
 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass  
 Occasion which now smiles; behold alone 480  
 The woman, opportune to all attempts,  
 Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,  
 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,  
 And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb  
 Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould, 485  
 Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,  
 I not: so much hath Hell debas'd, and pain  
 Enfeebled me, to what I was in Heaven.  
 She fair, divinely fair, fit love for Gods,  
 Not terrible, though terror be in love 490  
 And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate,  
 Hate stronger, under shew of love well feign'd,  
 The way which to her ruin now I tend."

So spake the enemy' of mankind, enclos'd

In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve 495  
 Address'd his way, not with indented wave,  
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,  
 Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd,  
 Fold above fold, a surging maze, his head  
 Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes ; 500  
 With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, erect  
 Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass  
 Floated redundant : pleasing was his shape,  
 And lovely ; never since of serpent kind  
 Lovelier, not those that in Illyria chang'd 505  
 Hermiope and Cadmus, or the God  
 In Epidaurus ; nor to which transform'd  
 Ammonian Jove, or Capitoline was seen,  
 He with Olympias, this with her who bore  
 Scipio the height of Rome. With tract oblique 510  
 At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd  
 To interrupt, sidelong he works his way.  
 As when a ship, by skilful steersman wrought,  
 Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind  
 Veers oft as oft so steers, and shifts her sail : 515  
 So varied he, and of his tortuous train  
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,  
 To lure her eye ; she busied heard the sound  
 Of rustling leaves, but minded not as us'd  
 To such disport before her through the field, 520  
 From every beast, more duteous at her call,  
 Than at Circean call the herd disguis'd.  
 He bolder now, uncall'd before her stood,  
 But as in gaze admiring : oft he bow'd  
 His turret crest, and sleek enamell'd neck, 525  
 Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.  
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length  
 The eye of Eve to mark his play ; he glad  
 Of her attention gain'd, with serpent tongue  
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air, 230  
 His fraudulent temptation thus began.

“ Wonder not, sov'reign Mistress, if perhaps  
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder ; much less arm

Thy looks, the Heav'n of mildness, with disdain,  
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze 535  
 Insatiate, I thus single, nor have fear'd  
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.  
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,  
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine  
 By gift, and thy celestial beauty' adore 540  
 With ravishment beheld, there best beheld  
 Where universally admir'd ; but here  
 In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,  
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern  
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except, 545  
 Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who shouldst be seen  
 A Goddess among Gods, ador'd and serv'd  
 By Angels numberless, thy daily train."

So glaz'd the Tempter, and his proem tun'd ;  
 Into the heart of Eve his words made way, 550  
 Though at the voice much marvelling : at length  
 Not unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.  
 " What may this man? language of man pronounc'd  
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd?  
 The first at least of these I thought deny'd 555  
 To beasts, whom God on their creation-day  
 Created mute to all articulate sound ;  
 The latter I demur, for in their looks  
 Much reas'on, and their actions, oft appears.  
 Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field 560  
 I knew, but not with human voice endued ;  
 Redoubled then this miracle, and say,  
 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how  
 To me so friendly grown above the rest  
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight : 565  
 Say, for such wonder claims attention due."  
 To whom the guileful Tempter thus reply'd.  
 " Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve,  
 Easy to me it is to tell thee all  
 What thou command'st, and right thou shouldst be obey'd

I was at first as other beasts that graze  
 The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,  
 As was my food ; nor ought but food discern'd  
 Or sex, and apprehended nothing high ;  
 Till on a day roving the field, I chanc'd 575  
 A goodly tree far distant to behold,  
 Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,  
 Ruddy and gold : I nearer drew to gaze ;  
 When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,  
 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense 580  
 Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats  
 Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,  
 Unsuck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play.  
 To satisfy the sharp desire I had  
 Of tasting those fair apples, I resolv'd 585  
 Not to defer ; hunger and thirst at once,  
 Pow'rful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent  
 Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keen.  
 About the mossy trunk I wound me soon,  
 For high from ground the branches would require 590  
 Thy utmost reach, or Adam's : round the tree  
 All other beasts that saw, with like desire  
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.  
 Amid the tree new got, where plenty hung  
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill 595  
 I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour  
 At feed or fountain never had I found.  
 Sated at length, ere long I might perceive  
 Strange alteration in me, to degree  
 Of reason in my inward pow'rs, and speech 600  
 Wanted not long, though to this shape retain'd.  
 Thenceforth to speculations high or deep  
 I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind  
 Consider'd all things visible in Heaven,  
 Or Earth, or Middle, all things fair and good : 605  
 But all that fair and good in thy divine  
 Semblance, and in thy beauty's heav'nly ray,  
 United I beheld ; no fair to thine  
 Equivalent or second, which compell'd

Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come  
And gaze, and worship thee, of right declar'd  
Sov'reign of creatures, universal Dame." 610

So talk'd the spirited sly Snake; and Eve,  
Yet more amaz'd, unwary thus reply'd.  
"Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt 615  
The virtue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd:  
But say, where grows the tree, from hence how far?  
For many are the trees of God that grow  
In Paradise, and various, yet unknown  
To us, in such abundance lies our choice, 620  
As leaves a greater store of fruit untouch'd,  
Still hanging incorruptible, till men  
Grow up to their provision, and more hands  
Help to disburden Nature of her birth."

To whom the wily Adder, blithe and glad. 625  
"Empress, the way is ready, and not long,  
Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,  
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past  
Of blowing myrrh and balm; if thou accept  
My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon." 630

"Lead then," said Eve. He leading swiftly roll'd  
In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,  
To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy  
Brightens his crest; as when a wand'ring fire,  
Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night 635  
Condenses, and the cold environs round,  
Kindled through agitation to a flame,  
Which oft they say, some evil Spi'rit attends,  
Hovering and blazing with delusive light,  
Misleads th' amaz'd night-wand'rer from his way 640  
To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool,  
There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far,  
So glister'd the dire snake, and into fraud  
Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree  
Of prohibition, root of all our woe; 645

Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

"Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,  
Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to' excess,

The credit of whose virtue rest with thee,  
Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects. 650

But of this tree we may not taste nor touch ;  
God so commauded, and left that command  
Sole daughter of his voice ; the rest we live  
Law to ourselves, our reason is our law."

To whom the Tempter guilefully reply'd. 665

" Indeed? hath God then said that of the fruit  
Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,  
Yet Lords declar'd of all in earth or air?"

To whom thus Eve yet sinless. " Of the fruit  
Of each tree in the garden we may eat, 660  
But of the fruit of this fair tree, amidst  
The garden, God hath said, ' Ye shall not eat  
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.' "

She scarce had said, tho' brief, when, now more bold,  
The Tempter, but with shew of zeal and love 665

To Man, and indignation at his wrong,  
New part puts on, and as to passion mov'd,  
Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely and in act  
Rais'd, as of some great matter to begin.  
As when of old some orator renown'd, 670

In Athens, or free Rome, where eloquence  
Flourish'd, since mute, to some great cause address'd  
Stood in himself collected, while each part,  
Motion, each act, won audience ere the tongue,  
Sometimes in height began, as no delay 675

Of preface brooking through his zeal of right:  
So standing, moving, or to height up grown,  
The tempter, all impassson'd, thus began.

" O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving Plant,  
Mother of science, now I feel thy power 680  
Within me clear, not only to discern

Things in their causes, but to trace the ways  
Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.

Queen of this universe, do not believe  
Those rigid threats of death ; ye shall not die : 685

How should ye? by the fruit? it gives you life  
To knowledge ; by the threat'ner? look on me,

Me who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,  
 And life more perfect have attain'd than fate  
 Meant me, by vent'ring higher than my lot. 690  
 Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast  
 Is open? or will God incense his ire  
 For such a petty trespass, and not praise  
 Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pair  
 Of death denounc'd, whatever thing death be, 695  
 Deter'd not from achieving what might lead  
 To happier life, knowledge of good and evil;  
 Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil  
 Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?  
 God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just; 700  
 Not just, not God; not fear'd then, nor obey'd:  
 Your fear itself of death removes the fear.  
 Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,  
 Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,  
 His worshippers; he knows that in the day 705  
 Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,  
 Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then  
 Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as Gods,  
 Knowing both good and evil as they know.  
 That ye shall be as Gods, since I as Man, 710  
 Internal Man, is but proportion meet;  
 I of brute human, ye of human Gods.  
 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off  
 Human, to put on Gods: death to be wish'd,  
 Tho' threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring.  
 And what are Gods that man may not become 716  
 As they, participating God-like food?  
 The Gods are first, and that advantage use  
 On our belief, that all from them proceeds;  
 I question it, for this fair earth I see, 720  
 Warm'd by the sun, producing every kind,  
 Them nothing: if they all things, who enclos'd  
 Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,  
 That whoso eats thereof, forthwith attains  
 Wisdom without their leave? and wherein lies 725  
 The offence, that man should thus attain to know?

What can your knowledge hurt him, or this tree  
 Impart against his will, if all be his?  
 Or is it envy, and can envy dwell  
 In heav'nly breasts? These, these, and many more 730  
 Causes import your need of this fair fruit.  
 Goddess humane, reach them, and freely taste."  
 He ended, and his words, replete with guile,  
 Into her heart too easy entrance won.  
 Fix'd on the fruit she gaz'd, which to behold 735  
 Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound  
 Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd  
 With reason, to her seeming, and with truth ;  
 Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and wak'd  
 An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell 740  
 So savoury of that fruit, which with desire,  
 Inclivable now grown to touch or taste,  
 Solicited her longing eye ; yet first,  
 Pausing a while, thus to herself she mus'd.  
 " Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits 745  
 Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd,  
 Whose taste, too long forborne, at first essay  
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught  
 The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise :  
 Thy praise he also, who forbids thy use, 750  
 Conceals not from us, naming thee the tree  
 Of knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil ;  
 Forbids us then to taste, but his forbidding  
 Commends thee more, while it infers the good  
 By thee communicated, and our want : 755  
 For good unknown, sure is not had, or had  
 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.  
 In plain, then, what forbids he but to know,  
 Forbids us good, forbids us be wise ?  
 Such prohibitions bind not. But if death 760  
 Bind us with after-bands, what profits then  
 Our inward freedom ? In the day we eat  
 Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.  
 How dies the Serpent ? he hath eat'n and lives,  
 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,

Irrational till then. For us alone  
 Was death invented? or to us deny'd  
 This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd?  
 For beasts it seems: yet that one beast which first  
 Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy 770  
 The good befall'n him, author unsuspect,  
 Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.  
 What fear I then, rather what know to fear  
 Under this ignorance of good and evil,  
 Of God or death, of law or penalty? 775  
 Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine.  
 Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,  
 Of virtue to make wise: what hinders then  
 To reach, and feed at once both body' and mind?"  
 So saying, her rash hand in evil hour 780  
 Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat:  
 Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat,  
 Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe  
 That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk  
 The guilty Serpent, and well might, for Eve, 785  
 Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else  
 Regarded, such delight till then as seem'd,  
 In fruit she never tasted, whether true  
 Or fancy'd so, through expectation high  
 Of knowledge, nor was Godhead from her thought. 790  
 Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint,  
 And knew not eating death. Sateiate at length,  
 And heighten'd as with wine, jocund and boon,  
 Thus to herself she pleasingly began.  
 "O sov'reign, virtuous, precious of all trees. 795  
 In Paradise, of operation blest  
 To sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,  
 And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end  
 Created; but henceforth my early care,  
 Not without song, each morning, and due praise, 800  
 Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden, ease  
 Of thy full branches, offer'd free to all:  
 Till dieted by thee I grow mature  
 In knowledge as the Gods who all things know;

Though others envy what they cannot give ; 805  
 For had the gift been theirs, it had not here  
 Thus grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,  
 Best guide ; not following thee I had remain'd  
 In ignorance ; thou open'st wisdom's way,  
 And giv'st access, though secret she retire. 810  
 And I perhaps am secret ; Heav'n is high,  
 High, and remote to see from thence distinct  
 Each thing on earth ; and other care perhaps  
 May have diverted from continual watch  
 Our great forbidding, safe with all his spies 815  
 About him. But to Adam in what sort  
 Shall I appear ? shall I to him make known  
 As yet my change, and give him to partake  
 Full happiness with me, or rather not,  
 But keep the odds of knowledge in my power 820  
 Without copartner ? so to add what wants  
 In female sex, the more to draw his love,  
 And render me more equal, and perhaps,  
 A thing not undesirable, sometime  
 Superior ; for inferior who is free ? 825  
 This may be well : but what if God have seen,  
 And death ensue ? then I shall be no more,  
 And Adam, wedded to another Eve,  
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct ;  
 A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve, 830  
 Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe :  
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths  
 I could endure, without him live no life."

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd,  
 But first low reverence done, as to the Power 835  
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd  
 Into the plant scintillating sap, deriv'd  
 From nectar, drink of Gods. Adam the while,  
 Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
 Of choicest flow'rs a garland to adorn 840  
 Her tresses, and her rural labours crown,  
 As reapers oft are wont their harvest queen.  
 Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new

Solace in her return, so long delay'd ;  
 Yet oft his heart divine of something ill,  
 Misgave him ; he the falt'ring measure felt ;  
 And forth to meet her went, the way she took  
 That morn when first they parted ; by the tree  
 Of knowledge he must pass, there he her met,  
 Scarce from the tree returning ; in her hand  
 A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smil'd,  
 New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.  
 To him she hasted ; in her face excuse  
 Came prologue, and apology too prompt,  
 Which with bland words at will she thus address'd. 855  
 " Hast thou not wonder'd Adam, at my stay ?  
 Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, depriv'd  
 Thy presence. agony of love till now  
 Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more  
 Mean I to try, what rash untry'd I sought,  
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange  
 Hath been the cause and wonderful to hear.  
 This tree is not, as we are told, a tree  
 Of danger tasted, nor to' evil unknown  
 Opening the way, but of divine effect 865  
 To open eyes, and make them Gods who taste ;  
 And hath been tasted such : the serpent wise,  
 Or not restrain'd as we or not obeying,  
 Hath eaten of the fruit, and is become,  
 Not dead, as we are threaten'd, but henceforth 870  
 Endued with human voice and human sense,  
 Reasoning to admiration, and with me  
 Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I  
 Have also tasted, and have also found  
 Th' effects to correspond, opener mine eyes,  
 Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,  
 And growing up to Godhead ; which for thee  
 Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.  
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss ;  
 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon. 880  
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot  
 May join us, equal joy, as equal love ;

Lest thou, not tasting different degree  
 Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce  
 Deity for thee, when fate will not permit." 885

Thus Eve with count'nance blithe her story told ;  
 But in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd.  
 On th' other side, Adam, soon as he heard  
 The fatal trespass done by Eve, amaz'd,  
 Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill 890  
 Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd ;  
 From his slack hand the garland wreath'd for Eve  
 Down dropt, and all the faded roses shed :  
 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length  
 First to himself he inward silence broke. 895

" O fairest of creation, last and best  
 Of all God's works, creature in whom excell'd  
 Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,  
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet !  
 How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost, 900  
 Defac'd, deflow'r'd, and now to death devote ?  
 Rather how hast thou yielded to transgress  
 The strict forbiddance, how to violate  
 The sacred fruit forbidd'n ? some cursed fraud  
 Of enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown, 905  
 And me with thee hath ruin'd, for with thee  
 Certain my resolution is to die.  
 How can I live without thee, how forego  
 Thy sweet converse, and love so dearly join'd,  
 To live again in these wild woods forlorn ! 910  
 Should God create another Eve, and I  
 Another rib afford, yet loss of thee  
 Would never from my heart ; no, no, I feel  
 The link of nature draw me : flesh of flesh,  
 Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state 915  
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe."

So having said, as one from sad dismay  
 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd,  
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless,  
 Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd.

" Bold deed thou hast presum'd, advent'rous Eve,

And peril great provok'd, who thus hast dar'd,  
 Had it been only coveting to eye  
 That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,  
 Much more to taste it under ban to touch. 925  
 But past who can recall, or done undo?  
 Not God omnipotent, nor Fate; yet so  
 Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact  
 Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,  
 Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first 930  
 Made common and unhallow'd ere our taste;  
 Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives,  
 Lives as thou said'st, and gains to live as Man  
 Higher degree of life, inducement strong  
 To us, as likely tasting to attain 935  
 Proportional ascent, which cannot be  
 But to be Gods, or Angels Demi-Gods.  
 Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,  
 Though threat'ning, will in earnest so destroy  
 Us his prime creatures, dignify'd so high, 940  
 Set over all his works, which in our fall,  
 For us created, needs with us must fail,  
 Dependent made; so God shall uncreate,  
 Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose,  
 Not well conceiv'd of God, who through his power 945  
 Creation could repeat, yet would be loth  
 Us to abolish, lest the Adversary  
 Triumph and say, 'Fickle their state whom God  
 Most favours; who can please him long? Me first  
 He ruin'd, now Mankind; whom will he next?' 950  
 Matter of scorn, not to be giv'n the Foe.  
 However I with thee have fix'd my lot,  
 Certain to undergo like doom; if death  
 Consort with thee, death is to me as life;  
 So forcible within my heart I feel 955  
 The bond of nature draw me to my own,  
 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine;  
 Our state cannot be sever'd, we are one,  
 One flesh; to lose thee were to lose myself."  
 So Adam, and thus Eye to him reply'd, 960

“ O glorious trial of exceeding love,  
 Illustrious evidence, example high !  
 Engaging me to emulate, but short  
 Of thy perfection. how shall I attain,  
 Adam? from whose dear side I boast me sprung, 965  
 And gladly of our union hear thee speak,  
 One heart, one soul in both ; whereof good proof  
 This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd,  
 Rather than death, or ought than death may dread,  
 Shall separate us, link'd in love so dear, 970  
 To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,  
 If any be, of tasting this fair fruit,  
 Whose virtue (for of good still proceeds,  
 Direct, or by occasion) hath presented  
 This happy trial of thy love, which else 975  
 So eminently never had been known.  
 Were it I thought death menac'd would ensue  
 This my attempt, I would sustain alone  
 The worst, and not persuade thee rather die  
 Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact 980  
 Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly assur'd  
 Remarkably so late of thy so true,  
 So faithful love unequal'd : but I feel  
 Far otherwise th' event, not death but life  
 Augmented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys, 985  
 Taste so divine, that what of sweet before  
 Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.  
 On my experience, Adam, freely taste,  
 And fear of death, deliver to the winds.”  
 So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy 990  
 Tenderly wept, much won that he his love  
 Had so ennobled, as of choice to' incur  
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.  
 In recompense (for such compliance bad  
 Such recompense best merits) from the bough 995  
 She gave him of that fair enticing fruit  
 With liberal hand : he scrupled not to eat  
 Against his better knowledge, not deceiv'd,  
 But fondly overcome with female charm.

- Earth trembled from her entrails, as again 1000  
 In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan ;  
 Sky low'r'd, and muttering thunder, some sad drops  
 Wept at completing of the mortal sin  
 Original ; while Adam took no thought,  
 Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate 1005  
 Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe  
 Him with her lov'd society, that now,  
 As with new wine intoxicated both,  
 They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel  
 Divinity within them breeding wings 1010  
 Wherewith to scora the earth : but that false fruit  
 Far other operation first display'd,  
 Carnal desire inflaming ; he on Eve  
 Began to cast lascivious eyes ; she him  
 As wantonly repaid ; in lust they burn : 1015  
 Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to daliance move.
- “ ‘ Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,  
 And elegant of sapience no small part,  
 Since to each meaning favour we apply,  
 And palate call judicious ; I the praise 1020  
 Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.  
 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd  
 From this delightful fruit, nor known till now  
 True relish, tasting ; if such pleasure be  
 In things to us forbidd'n, it might be wish'd, 1025  
 For this one tree had been forbidden ten.  
 But come, so well refresh'd, now let us play,  
 As meet is, after such delicious fare ;  
 For never did thy beauty, since the day  
 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd 1030  
 With all perfections, so inflame my sense  
 With ardour to enjoy thee, fairer now  
 Than ever, bounty of this virtuous tree.”
- So said he, and forebore not glance or toy  
 Of amorous intent, well understood' 1035  
 Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.  
 Her hand he seiz'd, and to a shady bank,  
 Thick over head with verdant roof-imbow'r'd,

He led her, nothing loth ; flow'rs were the couch,  
 Pansies, and violets, and asphodel, 1040  
 And hyacinth, earth's freshest softest lap.  
 There they their fill of love and love's disport  
 Took largely of their mutual guilt the seal,  
 The solace of their sin, till dewy sleep  
 Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play. 1045  
 Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,  
 That with exhilarating vapour bland  
 About their spi'rits had play'd, and inmost powers  
 Made err, was now exhal'd ; and grosser sleep,  
 Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams 1050  
 Encumber'd, now had left them ; up they rose  
 As from unrest, and each the other viewing,  
 Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds  
 How darken'd ; innocence, that as a veil  
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone, 1055  
 Just confidence, and native righteousness,  
 And honour from about them, naked left  
 To guilty shame ; he cover'd, but his robe  
 Uncover'd more. So rose the Danite strong,  
 Herculean Samson, from the harlot-lap 1060  
 Of Philistean Delilah, and wak'd  
 Shorn of his strength. They destitute and bare  
 Of all their virtue : silent, and in face  
 Confounded long they sat, as stricken mute,  
 Till Adam, though not less than Eve abash'd, 1065  
 At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd.  
 " O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear  
 To that false worm, of whomsoever taught  
 To counterfeit Man's voice, true in our fall,  
 False in our promis'd rising ; since our eyes 1070  
 Open'd we find indeed, we find and know  
 Both good and evil, good lost, and evil got,  
 Bad fruit of knowledge if this be to know,  
 Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,  
 Of innocence, of faith, of purity, 1075  
 Our wonted ornaments now soil'd and stain'd,  
 And in our faces evident the signs

Of foul concupiscence ; whence evil store ;  
 Ev'n shame, the last of evils : of the first  
 Be sure then. How shall I behold the face 1080  
 Henceforth of God or Angel, erst with joy  
 And rapture so' oft beheld? those heav'nly shapes  
 Will dazzle now this earthly with their blaze  
 Insufferably bright. O might I here  
 In solitude live savage, in some glade 1085  
 Obscur'd, where highest woods, impenetrable  
 To star or sun-light, spread their unbrage broad  
 And brown as evening. Cover me, ye Pines,  
 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs  
 Hide me, where I may uever see them more. 1090  
 But let us now, as in bad plight devise  
 What best may for the present serve to hide  
 The parts of each from other, that seem most  
 To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen ;  
 Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together sew'd  
 And girded on our loins, may cover round 1096  
 Those middle parts, that this new comer, shame,  
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean."  
 So counsell'd he, and both together went  
 Into the thickest wood ; there soon they chose 1100  
 The fig-tree, not that kind for fruit renown'd,  
 But such as at this day to Indians known  
 In Malabar or Decan spreads her arms  
 Branching so broad and long, that in the ground  
 The bended twigs take root, and daughter's grow 1105  
 About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade  
 High overarch'd, and echoing walks between ;  
 There oft the Indian herdsman, shunning heat,  
 Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds  
 At loop-holes cut thro' thickest shade. Those leaves  
 They gather'd, broad as Amazonian targe. 1111  
 And with what skill they had, together sew'd,  
 To gird their waist, vain covering if to hide  
 Their guilt and dreaded shame ; O how unlike  
 To that first naked glory ! Such of late 1115  
 Columbus found th' American, so girt

With feather'd cincture, naked else and wild  
 Among the trees on isles and woody shores.  
 Thus fenc'd, and as they thought, their shame in part  
 Cover'd, but, not at rest or ease of mind, 1120  
 They sat them down to weep; nor only tears  
 Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worse within  
 Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,  
 Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore  
 Their inward state of mind, calm region once 1125  
 And full of peace, now tost and turbulent:  
 For understanding rul'd not, and the will  
 Heard not her lore, both in subjection now  
 To sensual appetite, who from beneath,  
 Usurping over sov'reign reason claim'd 1130  
 Superior sway: from thus distemper'd breast,  
 Adam, estrang'd in look and alter'd style,  
 Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd.

"Would thou hadst hearken'd to my words, and stay'd  
 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange 1135  
 Desire of wand'ring this unhappy morn  
 I know not whence possess'd thee; we had then  
 Remain'd still happy, not, as now, despoil'd  
 Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable,  
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve  
 The faith they owe; when earnestly they seek 1141  
 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail."

To whom, soon mov'd with touch of blame, thus Eve.  
 "What words have pass'd thy lips, Adam severe!  
 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will 1145  
 Of wand'ring, as thou call'st it, which who knows  
 But might as ill have happen'd thou being by,  
 Or to thyself perhaps? Hadst thou been there,  
 Or here th' attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd  
 Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake; 1150  
 No ground of enmity between us known,  
 Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.  
 Was I to have never parted from thy side?  
 As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.  
 Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head, 1155

Command me absolutely not to go,  
 Going into such danger as thou saidst?  
 Too facile then thou didst not much gainsay,  
 Nay didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.  
 Hadst thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent, 1160  
 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me."

To whom then, first incens'd, Adam reply'd.  
 "Is this the love, is this the recompense  
 Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve, express'd  
 Immutable when thou wert lost, not I, 1165

Who might have liv'd and joy'd immortal bliss,  
 Yet willingly chose rather death with thee?

And am I now upbraided as the cause  
 Of thy transgressing? not enough severe,

It seems, in thy restraint: what could I more? 1170  
 I warn'd thee. I admonish'd thee, foretold

The danger, and the lurking enemy  
 That lay in wait; beyond this had been force,

And force upon free-will hath here no place.  
 But confidence then bore thee on secure 1175

Either to meet no danger, or to find  
 Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps  
 I also err'd in overmuch admiring

What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought  
 No evil durst attempt thee; but I rue 1180

That error now, which is become my crime,  
 And thou th' accuser. Thus it shall befall

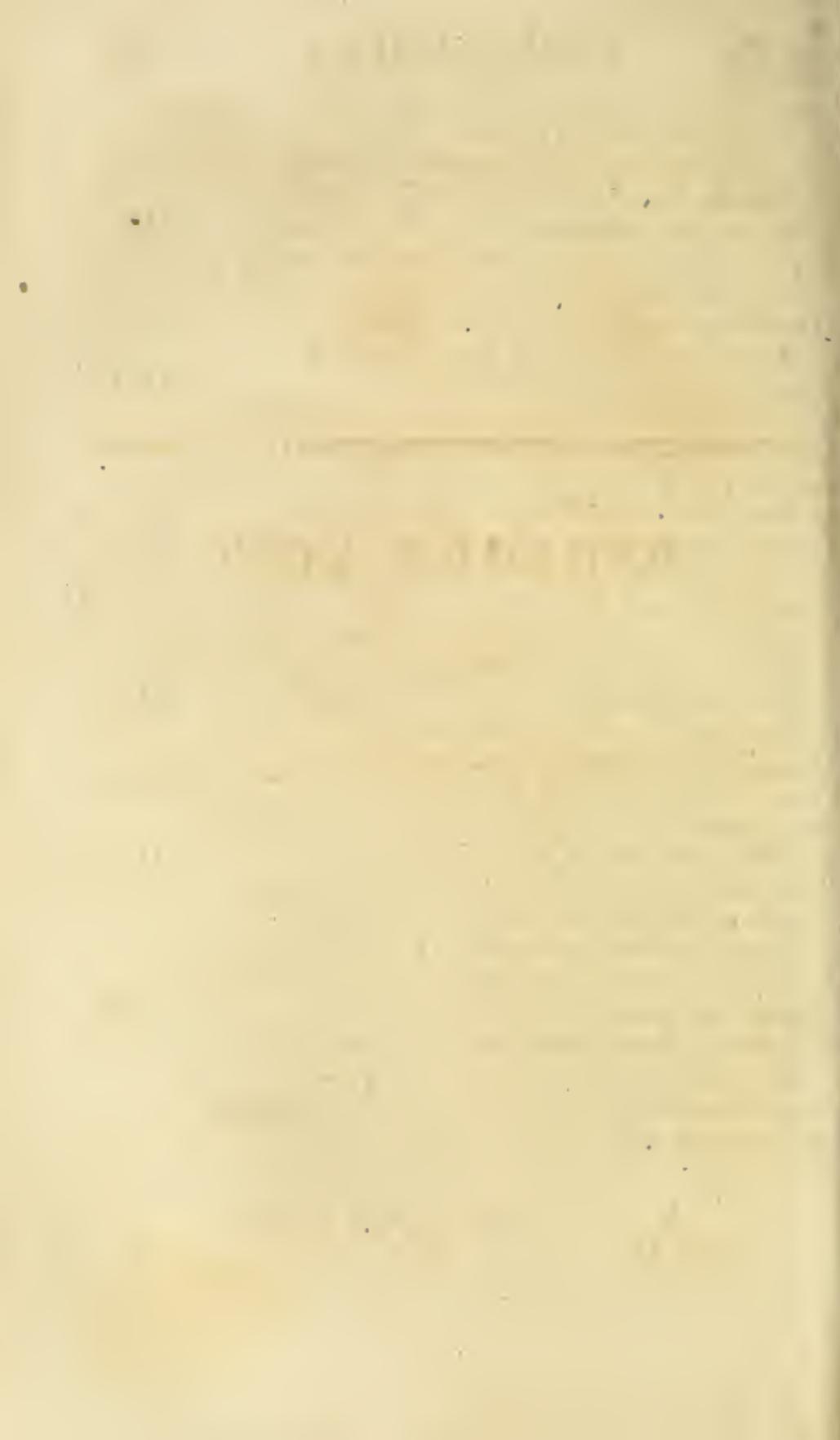
Him who to worth in women overtrusting  
 Lets her will rule; restraint she will not brook,

And left to' herself, if evil thence ensue, 1185  
 She first his weak indulgence will accuse."

Thus they in mutual accusation spent  
 The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,

And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

END OF THE NINTH BOOK.



---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

**BOOK X.**

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

Man's transgression known, the guardian Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve their vigilance; and are approved, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors, who descends and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and reascends. Sin and Death, sitting till then at the gates of Hell, by wondrous sympathy, feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by Man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in Hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of Man. To make the way easier from Hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad highway or bridge over chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then, preparing for earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to Hell: their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium; in full assembly relates, with boasting, his success against Man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed with himself also suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise: then, deluded with a shew of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death. God foretells the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but, for the present, commands his Angels to make several alterations in the Heavens and elements. Adam, more and more perceiving his fallen condition, heavily bewails; rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him: then, to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not, but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the Serpent, and exhorts her, with him, to seek peace with the offended Deity by repentance and supplication.

# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK X.

MEANWHILE the heinous and despiteful act  
Of Satan done in Paradise, and how  
He in the serpent had perverted Eve,  
Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,  
Was known in Heav'n; for what can 'scape the eye 5  
Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart  
Omniscient? who, in all things wise and just,  
Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind  
Of man, with strength entire, and free-will arm'd,  
Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd 10  
Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.  
For still they knew, and ought to' have still remember'd,  
The high injunction not to taste that fruit,  
Whoever tempted: which they not obeying,  
Incurr'd (what could they less?) the penalty, 15  
And, manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.  
Up into Heav'n from Paradise in haste  
Th' angelic guards ascended, mute and sad  
For Man, for of his state by this they knew,  
Much wond'ring how the subtle Fiend had stol'n, 20  
Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news  
From earth arriv'd at Heav'n gate, displeas'd  
All were who heard; dim sadness did not spare  
That time celestial visages, yet mix'd  
With pity, violated not their bliss. 25  
About the new-arrived, in multitudes  
The etherial people ran, to hear and know  
How all befell; they tow'ards the throne supreme  
Accountable made haste to make appear  
With righteous plea their utmost vigilance, 30  
And easily approv'd; when the most high

Eternal Father, from his secret cloud,  
Amidst in thunder utter'd thus his voice.

“ Assembled Angels, and ye Pow'rs return'd  
From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd, 35  
Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,  
Which your sincerest care could not prevent,  
Foretold so lately what would come to pass,  
When first this tempter cross'd the gulf from Hell.  
I told ye then he should prevail and speed 40  
On his bad errand, Man should be seduc'd  
And flatter'd out of all, believing lies  
Against his Maker ; no decree of mine  
Concurring to necessitate his fall,  
Or touch with lightest moment of impulse 45  
His free will. to her own inclining left  
In even scale. But fall'n he is ; and now  
What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass  
On his transgression, death denounc'd that day?  
Which he presumes already vain and void, 50  
Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,  
By some immediate stroke ; but soon shall find  
Forbearance no acquittance ere day end.  
Justice shall not return as bounty scorn'd.  
But whom send I to judge them ? Whom but thee, 55  
Vicegerent Son ? to thee I have transferr'd  
All judgment, whether in Heav'n, or Earth, or Hell.  
Easy it may be seen that I intend  
Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee  
Man's friend, his mediator, his design'd 60  
Both ransom and redeemer voluntary,  
And destin'd Man himself to judge Man fall'n.”  
So spake the Father, and unfolding bright  
Tow'rd the right hand his glory, on the Son  
Blaz'd forth unclouded deity : he full 65  
Resplendent all his Father manifest  
Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild.  
“ Father eternal, thine is to decree,  
Mine both in Heav'n and Earth to do thy will  
Supreme, that thou in me thy Son belov'd 70  
May'st ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge

On earth these thy transgressors, but thou know'st,  
 Whoever judg'd, the worst on me must light,  
 When time shall be, for so I undertook  
 Before thee'; and not repenting, this obtain 75  
 Of right, that I may mitigate their doom  
 On me deriv'd; yet I shall temper so  
 Justice with mercy,' as may illustrate most  
 Them fully satisfy'd, and thee appease.  
 Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none 80  
 Are to behold the judgment, but the judg'd,  
 Those two; the third best absent is condemn'd,  
 Convict by flight, and rebel to all law:  
 Conviction to the serpent none belongs.'

Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose 85  
 Of high collateral glory': him Thrones and Powers,  
 Princedoms, and Dominations, ministrant,  
 Accompanied to Heaven gate, from whence  
 Eden and all the coast in prospect lay.  
 Down he descended straight; the speed of Gods 90  
 Time counts not, tho' with swiftest minutes wing'd.  
 Now was the sun in western cadence low  
 From noon, and gentle airs due at their hour  
 To fan the earth now wak'd, and usher in  
 The evening cool, when he from wrath more cool 95  
 Came the mild judge and intercessor-both  
 To sentence Man: the voice of God they heard  
 Now walking in the garden, by soft winds  
 Brought to their ears, while day declin'd; they heard,  
 And from his presence hid themselves among 100  
 The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God  
 Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud.  
 "Where art thou, Adam, wout with joy to meet  
 My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,  
 Not pleas'd, thus entertain'd with solitude, 105  
 Where obvious duty' ere while appear'd unsought:  
 Or come I less conspicuous, or what change  
 Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth."

He came, and with him Eve, more loth, tho' first  
 To offend; discount'nanc'd both, and discompos'd; 110  
 Love was not in their looks, either to God

Or to each other, but apparent guilt,  
 And shame, and perturbation, and despair,  
 Anger, and obstinacy', and hate, and guile.  
 Whence Adam, falt'ring long, thus answer'd brief. 115  
 " I heard thee in the gard'n, and of thy voice  
 Afraid, being naked, hid myself." To whom  
 The gracious judge without revile reply'd.  
 " My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,  
 But still rejoic'd ; how is it now become 120  
 So dreadful to thee ? that thou' art naked, who  
 Hath told thee ? hast thou eaten of the tree,  
 Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat ?"  
 To whom thus Adam, sore beset, reply'd.  
 " O Heav'n ! in evil straight this day I stand 125  
 Before my judge, either to undergo  
 Myself the total crime, or to accuse  
 My other self, the part'ner of my life ;  
 Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,  
 I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130  
 By my complaint ; but strict necessity  
 Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,  
 Lest on my head both sin and punishment,  
 However insupportable, be all  
 Devolv'd ; though should I hold my peace, yet thou 135  
 Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.  
 This Woman, whom thou mad'st to be my help,  
 And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,  
 So fit, so acceptable, so divine,  
 That from her hand I could suspect no ill, 140  
 And what she did, whatever in itself,  
 Her doing seem'd to justify the deed ;  
 She gave me of the tree, and I did eat."  
 To whom the sov'reign Presence thus reply'd.  
 " Was she thy God, that her thou didst obey 145.  
 Before his voice, or was she made thy guide,  
 Superior or but equal, that to her  
 Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place  
 Wherein God set thee' above her made of thee,  
 And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd 150  
 Her's in all real dignity ? Adorn'd

She was indeed, and lovely to attract  
 Thy love, not thy subjection ; and her gifts  
 Were such as under government well seem'd,  
 Unseemly to bear rule, which was thy part 155  
 And person, hadst thou known thyself aright."

So having said, he thus to Eve in few.

" Say Woman, what is this which thou hast done?"

To whom sad Eve, with shame nigh overwhelm'd,  
 Confessing soon, yet not before her judge 160  
 Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd reply'd.

" The Serpent me beguil'd, and I did eat."

Which when the Lord God heard, without delay  
 To judgment he proceeded on th' accurs'd  
 Serpent though brute, unable to transfer 165  
 The guilt on him who made him instrument

Of mischief, and polluted from the end  
 Of his creation : justly then accurs'd,  
 As vitiated in Nature : more to know  
 Concern'd not Man (since he no further knew) 170

Nor alter'd his offence ; yet God at last  
 To Satan, first in sin, his doom apply'd,  
 Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best :  
 And on the serpent thus his curse let fall.

" Because thou hast done this, thou art accurs'd 176  
 Above all cattle, each beast of the field ;  
 Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go,  
 And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.

Between thee and the Woman I will put  
 Enmity, and between thine and her seed ; 180  
 Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel,"

So spake this oracle, then verify'd

When Jesus, son of Mary, second Eve,  
 Saw Satan fall like lightning down from Heav'n,  
 Prince of the air ; then rising from his grave 185  
 Spoil'd Principalities and Pow'rs, triumph'd

In open show, and with ascension bright  
 Captivity led captive through the air,  
 The realm itself of Satan long usurp'd,  
 Whom he shall tread at last under our feet ; 190

Ev'n he who now foretold his fatal bruise,  
 And to the Woman thus his sentence turn'd.  
 "Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply  
 By thy conception; children thou shalt bring  
 In sorrow forth; and to thy husband's will  
 Thine shall submit; he over thee shall rule." 195

On Adam last thus judgment he pronounc'd.  
 "Beca use thou' hast hearken'd to the' voice of thy wife,  
 And eaten of the tree, concerning which  
 I charg'd thee, say'ing, 'Thou shalt not eat thereof:  
 Curs'd is the ground for thy sake; thou in sorrow 200  
 Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life;  
 Thorns also' and thistles it shall bring thee forth  
 Unbid; and thou shalt eat th' herb of the field,  
 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, 205  
 Till thou return unto the ground; for thou  
 Out of the ground wast taken, know thy birth,  
 For dust thou art, and shall to dust return."

So judg'd he Man, both judge and saviour sent,  
 And th' instant stroke of death denounc'd, that day 210  
 Remov'd far off; then pitying how they stood  
 Before him naked to the air, that now  
 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin  
 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume,  
 As when he wash'd his servants feet, so now 215  
 As father of his family he clad  
 Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,  
 Or as the snake with youthful coat repaid;  
 And thought not much to clothe his enemies:  
 Nor he their outward only with the skins 220  
 Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more  
 Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness,  
 Arraying cover'd from his Father's sight.  
 To him with swift ascent he up return'd,  
 Into his blissful bosom reassum'd 225  
 In glory as of old; to him pleas'd  
 All, though all-knowing, what had pass'd with Man  
 Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.

Meanwhile, ere thus was sinn'd and judg'd on Earth,  
 Within the gates of Hell sat Sin and Death, 230

In counterview within the gates, that now  
 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame  
 Far into Chaos, since the Fiend pass'd through,  
 Sin opening, who thus now to Death began.

“ O Son, why sit we here each other viewing 235

Idly, while Satan, our great author thrives

In other worlds, and happier seat provides

For us his offspring dear ? It cannot be

But that success attends him ; if mishap,

Ere this he had return'd, with fury driven 240

By his avengers, since no place like this

Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.

Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,

Wings growing, and dominion giv'n me large

Beyond this deep ; whatever draws me on, 245

Or sympathy or some connatural force

Pow'rful at greatest distance to unite

With secret amity things of like kind

By secretest conveyance. Thou my shade

Inseparable must with me along : 250

For Death from Sin no pow'r can separate.

But lest the difficulty of passing back

Stay his return perhaps over this gulf

Impassible, impervious, let us try

Advent'rous work, yet to thy pow'r and mine 255

Not unagreeable, to found a path

Over this main from Hell to that new world

Where Satan now prevails, a monument

Of merit high to all th' infernal host,

Easing their passage hence, for intercourse, 260

Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.

Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn

By this new-felt attraction and instinct.”

Whom thus the meagre Shadow answer'd soon.

“ Go whither fate and inclination strong 265

Leads thee : I shall not lag behind, nor err

The way, thou leading, such a scent I draw

Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste

The savour of Death from all things there that live:

Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest  
Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid." 270

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell  
Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock  
Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,  
Against the day of battle, to a field, 275

Where armies lie encamp'd, come flying, lur'd  
With scent of living carcasses design'd  
For death, the following day, in bloody fight:  
So scented the grim Feature, and upturn'd  
His nostril wide into the murky air, 280  
S. gacious of his quarry from so far.

Then both from out Hell-gates into the waste  
Wide anarchy of Chaos damp and dark  
Flew diverse, and with pow'er (their pow'r was great)  
Hovering upon the waters, what they met, 285

Solid or slimy, as in raging sea  
Tost up and down, together crowded drove  
From each side shoaling tow'ards the mouth of Hell:  
As when two polar winds, blowing adverse  
Upon the Cronian sea, together drive 290

Mountains of ice, that stop th' imagin'd way  
Beyond Petsora eastward, to the rich  
Cathaian coast. The aggregated soil  
Death with his mace petrific, cold and dry,  
As with a trident smote, and fix'd as firm 295

As Delos floating once; the rest his look  
Bound with Gorgonian rigour not to move;  
And with Asphaltic slime, broad as the gate,  
Deep to the roots of Hell the gather'd beach  
They fasten'd, and the mole immense wrought on 300

Over the foaming deep high arch'd a bridge  
Of length prodigious, joining to the wall  
Immoveable of this now fenceless world  
Forfeit to Death; from hence a passage broad,  
Smooth, easy, inoffensive down to Hell. 305

So, if great things to small may be compar'd,  
Xerxes, the liberty of Greece to yoke,  
From Susa his Memnonian palace high  
Came to the sea, and over Hellespont

Book X.	PARADISE LOST.	241
Bridging his way, Europe with Asia join'd,		310
And scourg'd with many a stroke th' indignant waves.		
Now had they brought the work by wondrous art		
Pontifical, a ridge of pendent rock,		
Over the vex'd abyss, following the track		
Of Satan to the self-same place where he		315
First lighted from his wing, and landed safe		
From out of Chaos, to the outside bare		
Of this round world ; with pins of adamant		
And chains they made all fast, too fast they made		
And durable ; and now in little space		320
The confines met of empyréan Heaven		
And of this World, and on the left hand Hell		
With long reach interpos'd ; three several ways		
In sight, to each of these three places led.		
And now their way to Earth they had descry'd,		325
To Paradise first tending, when behold		
Satan in likeness of an Angel bright		
Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion steering		
His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose :		
Disguis'd he came, but those his children dear		330
Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.		
He, after Eve seduc'd, unminded slunk		
Into the wood fast by, and changing shape		
To' observe the sequel, saw his guileful act		
By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded		335
Upon her husband, saw their shame that sought		
Vain covertures ; but when he saw descend		
The Son of God to judge them, terrify'd		
He fled, not hoping to escape, but shun		
The present, fearing guilty what his wrath		340
Might suddenly inflict ; that past, return'd,		
By night, and list'ning where the hapless pair		
Sat in their sad discourse, and various plaint,		
Thence gather'd his own doom, which understood		
Not instant, but of future time, with joy		345
And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd,		
And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot		
Of this new wondrous pontifice, unhop'd		
Met who to meet him came, his offspring dear.		

Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight 350  
 Of that stupendous bridge his joy increas'd.  
 Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair  
 Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke.

“O Parent, these are thy magnific deeds,  
 Thy trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own; 355  
 Thou art their author and prime architect:

For I no sooner in my heart divin'd,  
 My heart, which by a secret harmony

Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,

That thou on earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks 360

Now also evidence, but straight I felt,

Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt

That I must after thee with this thy son,

Such fatal consequence unites us three:

Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds, 365

Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure

Detain from following thy illustrious track.

Thou hast achiev'd our liberty, confin'd

Within Hell-gates till now, thou us impower'd

To fortify thus far, and overlay 370

With this portentous bridge the dark abyss.

Thine now is all this world; thy virtue' hath won

What thy hands builded not, thy wisdom gain'd

With odds what war hath lost, and fully' aveng'd 375

Our foil in Heav'n; here thou shalt monarch reign,

There didst not; there let him still victor sway,

As battle hath adjudg'd, from this new world

Retiring, by his own doom alienated,

And henceforth monarchy with thee divide

Of all things parted by th' empyreal bounds, 380

His quadrature, from thy orbicular world,

Or try thee now more dang'rous to his throne.”

Whom thus the Prince of darkness answer'd glad.

“Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both, 385

High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race

Of Satan, (for I glory in the name,

Antagonist of Heav'n's Almighty King)

Amply have merited of me, of all

Th' infernal empire, that so near Heav'n's door

Triumphal with triumphal act have met,  
 Mine with this glorious work, and made one realm  
 Hell and this world, one realm, one continent  
 Of easy thorough-fare. Therefore while I  
 Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,  
 To my associate Pow'rs, them to acquaint  
 With these successes and with them rejoice,  
 You two this way, among these numerous orbs,  
 All yours, right down to Paradise descend;  
 There dwell and reign in bliss, thence on the earth  
 Dominion exercise, and in the air,  
 Chiefly on Man, sole lord of all declar'd,  
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.  
 My substitutes I send ye, and create  
 Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might  
 Issuing from me: on your joint vigour now  
 My hold of this new kingdom all depends,  
 Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.  
 If your joint pow'r prevail th' affairs of Hell  
 No detriment need fear; go and be strong."

So saying, he dismiss'd them; they with speed  
 Their course through thickest constellations held,  
 Spreading their bane; the blasted stars look'd wan,  
 And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse  
 Then suffer'd. The other way Satan went down  
 The causey to Hell-gate; on either side  
 Disparted Chaos over-built exclaim'd,  
 And with rebounding surge the bars assail'd,  
 That scorn'd his indignation: through the gate,  
 Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd,  
 And all about found desolate; for those  
 Appointed to sit there had left their charge,  
 Flown to the upper world; the rest were all  
 Far to th' inland retir'd, about the walls  
 Of Pandemonium, city and proud seat  
 Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd,  
 Of that bright star to Satan paragon'd.  
 There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand  
 In council sat, solicitous what chance

Might intercept their empe'ror sent; so he  
 Departing gave command, and they observ'd. 439  
 As when the Tartar from his Russian foe  
 By Astracan over the snowy plains  
 Retires, or Bactrian Sophi from the horns  
 Of Turkish crescent, leaves all waste beyond  
 The realm of Aladule, in his retreat 435  
 To Tauris or Casbeen; so these, the late  
 Heav'n-banish'd host, left desert utmost Hell  
 Many a dark league, reduc'd in careful watch  
 Round their metropolis, and now expecting  
 Each hour their great adventurer from the search 440  
 Of foreign worlds. He through the midst, unmark'd,  
 In show plebeian Angel militant  
 Of lowest order, pass'd; and from the door  
 Of that Plutonian hall, invisible,  
 Ascended his high throne, which under state 445  
 Of richest texture spread, at the upper end  
 Was plac'd in regal lustre. Down a while  
 He sat, and round about him saw unseen:  
 At last as from a cloud, his fulgent head  
 And shape star-bright appear'd, or brighter, clad 450  
 With what permissive glory since his fall  
 Was left him, or false glitter. All amaz'd  
 At that so sudden blaze, the Stygian throng  
 Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,  
 Their mighty chief return'd: loud was the acclaim;  
 Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting peers,  
 Rais'd from their dark Divan, and with like joy  
 Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand  
 Silence. and with these words, attention won.  
 "Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
 For in possession such, not only' of right, 461  
 I call ye and declare ye now, return'd,  
 Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth  
 Triumphant out of this infernal pit  
 Abominable, accurs'd, the house of woe, 465  
 And dungeon of our tyrant: now possess,  
 As Lords, a specious world, to our native Heaven

Little inferior, by my adventure hard  
 With peril great achiev'd. Long were to tell  
 What I have done, what suffer'd, with what pain 470  
 Voyag'd the unreal, vast, unbounded deep  
 Of horrible confusion, over which,  
 By Sin and Death, a broad way now is pav'd  
 To expedite your glorious march; but I  
 Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride 475  
 Th' untractable abyss, plung'd in the womb  
 Of unoriginal Night and Chaos wild,  
 That jealous of their secrets fiercely' oppos'd  
 My journey strange, with clamorous uproar  
 Protesting Fate supreme; thence how I found 480  
 The new-created world, which fame in Heaven  
 Long had foretold, a fabric wonderful,  
 Of absolute perfection, therein Man  
 Plac'd in a Paradise, by our exile  
 Made happy. Him by fraud I have seduc'd 485  
 From his Creator, and the more to' increase  
 Your wonder, with an apple; he thereat  
 Offended, worth your laughter, hath giv'n up  
 Both his beloved Man and all his world,  
 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, 490  
 Without our hazard, labour, or alarm,  
 To range in, and to dwell, and over Man  
 To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.  
 True is, me also he hath judg'd, or rather  
 Me not, but the brute serpent in whose shape 495  
 Man I deceiv'd: that which to me belongs  
 Is enmity, which he will put between  
 Me and mankind; I am to bruise his heel;  
 His seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head.  
 A world who would not purchase with a bruise, 500  
 Or much more grievous pain? Ye have th' account  
 Of my performance: what remains, ye Gods,  
 But up and enter now into full bliss?"

So having said, a while he stood expecting  
 Their universal shout and high applause 505  
 To fill his ear; when, contrary, he hears  
 On all sides, from innumerable tongues,

A dismal universal hiss, the sound  
 Of public scorn; he wonder'd, but not long  
 Had leisure, wond'ring at himself now more; 510  
 His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,  
 His arms clung to his ribs; his legs intertwining  
 Each other, till supplanted down he fell  
 A monstrous serpent on his bely prone,  
 Reluctant, but in vain, a greater power 515  
 Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd  
 According to his doom. He would have spoke,  
 But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue  
 To forked tongue, for now were all transform'd  
 Alike, to serpents all, as accessories 520  
 To his bold riot: dreadful was the din  
 Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now  
 With complicated monsters head and tail,  
 Scorpion, and Asp, and Amphisbæna dire,  
 Cerastes horn'd, Hydrus, and Elops drear, 525  
 And Dipsas (not so thick swarm'd once the soil  
 Bedropt with blood of Gorgon, or the isle  
 Ophiusa); but still the greatest he the midst,  
 Now dragon grown, larger than whom the sun  
 Engender'd in the Pythian vale on slime, 530  
 Huge Python, and his pow'r no less he seem'd  
 Above the rest still to retain. They all  
 Him follow'd, issuing forth to th' open field,  
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout,  
 Heav'n-fall'n, in station stood or just array, 535  
 Sublime with expectation when to see  
 In triumph issuing forth their glorious chief.  
 They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd  
 Of ugly serpents; horror on them fell,  
 And horrid sympathy; for what they saw 540  
 They felt themselves now changing; down their arms,  
 Down fell both spear and shield, down they as fast,  
 And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form,  
 Catch'd by contagion, like in punishment,  
 As in their crime. Thus was th' applause they meant  
 Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame, 546  
 Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There stood

A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,  
 His will who reigns above, to aggravate  
 Their penance, laden with fair fruit, like that 550  
 Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve  
 Us'd by the Tempter; on that prospect strange  
 Their earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining  
 For one forbidden tree a multitude  
 Now ris'n, to work them further woe or shame; 555  
 Yet parch'd with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,  
 Though to delude them sent, could not abstain,  
 But on they roll'd in heaps, and up the trees  
 Climbing, sat thicker than the snaky locks  
 That curl'd Megæra: greedily they pluck'd 560  
 The fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew.  
 Near that bituminous lake where Sodom flam'd;  
 This more delusive, not to touch, but taste  
 Deceiv'd; they fondly thinking to allay  
 Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit 565  
 Chew'd bitter ashes, which th' offended taste  
 With spattering noise rejected: oft they' assay'd,  
 Hunger and thirst constraining, drugg'd as oft,  
 With hatefullest disrelish with'd their jaws  
 With soot and cinders fill'd; so oft they fell 570  
 Into the same illusion, not as Man (plagu'd  
 Whom they triumph'd once laps'd. Thus were they  
 And worn with famine, long and ceaseless hiss,  
 Till their lost shape, permitted, they resum'd,  
 Yearly enjoin'd, some say, to undergo 575  
 This annual humbling certain number'd days,  
 To dash their pride, and joy for Man seduc'd.  
 However some tradition they dispers'd  
 Among the heathen of their purchase got,  
 And fabled how the Serpent whom they call'd 580  
 Ophion with Eurynome, the wide  
 Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule  
 Of high Olympus, thence by Saturn driven  
 And Ops, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.  
 Meanwhile in Paradise the hellish pair 585  
 Too soon arriv'd, Sin there in pow'r before,  
 Once actual, now in body, and to dwell

Habitual habitant ; behind her Death  
 Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet  
 On his pale horse : to whom Sin thus began. 590

“ Second of Satan sprung, all conqu’ring Death,  
 What think’st thou of our empire now, tho’ earn’d  
 With travel difficult, not better far  
 Than still at Hell’s dark threshold to’ have sat watch,  
 Unnam’d: undreaded, and thyself half-starv’d ?” 595

Whom thus the Sin-born monster answer’d soon,  
 “ To me, who with eternal famine pine,  
 Alike in Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven,  
 There best, where most with ravine I may meet ;  
 Which here, tho’ plenteous, all too little seems 600  
 To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corpse.”

To whom th’ incestuous mother thus reply’d.  
 “ Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers,  
 Feed first, on each beast next, and fish, and fowl,  
 No homely morsels ; and whatever thing 605

The sith of Time mows down, devour unspar’d ;  
 Till I in Man residing through the race,  
 His thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,  
 And season him thy last and sweetest prey.”

This said, they both betook them several ways, 610  
 Both to destroy, or unimmortal make  
 All kinds, and for destruction to mature  
 Sooner or later ; which th’ Almighty seeing,  
 From his transcendent seat the Saints among,  
 To those bright Orders utter’d thus his voice. 615

“ See with what heat these dogs of Hell advance  
 To waste and havock yonder world, which I  
 So fair and good created, and had still  
 Kept in that state, had not the folly’ of Man  
 Let in these wasteful furies, who impute 620

Folly to me, so doth the prince of Hell  
 And his adherents, that with so much ease  
 I suffer them to enter and possess

A place so heav’nly, and conniving seem  
 To gratify my scornful enemies, 625  
 That laugh, as if transported with some fit  
 Of passion, I to them had quitted all,

At random yielded up to their misrule  
 And know not that I call'd and drew them thither,  
 My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth 630  
 Which Man's polluting sin with taint hath shed  
 On what was pure, till cramm'd and gorg'd, nigh burst  
 With suck'd and glutted offal, at one sling  
 Of thy victorious arm, well-pleasing Son,  
 Both Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave, at last, 635  
 Through Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of Hell  
 For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.  
 Then Heav'n and earth renew'd shall be made pure  
 To sanctity, that shall receive no stain  
 Till then the curse pronounc'd on both precedes." 640  
 He ended, and the heav'nly audience loud  
 Sung Halleluiah, as the sound of seas,  
 Through multitude that sung: "Just are thy ways,  
 Righteous are thy decrees on all thy works;  
 Who can extenuate thee?" Next, to the Son, 645  
 "Destin'd restorer of mankind, by whom  
 New Heav'n and Earth shall to the ages rise,  
 Or down from Heav'n descend." Such was their song,  
 While the Creator, calling forth by name  
 His mighty Angels, gave them several charge, 650  
 As sorted best with present things. The sun  
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,  
 As might affect the earth with cold and heat  
 Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call  
 Decrepit winter, from the south to bring 655  
 Solstitial summer's heat. To the blank moon  
 Her office they prescrib'd, to th' other five  
 Their planetary motions and aspects  
 In sextile, square, and trine, and opposite 660  
 Of noxious efficacy, and when to join  
 In synod unbenign; and taught the fix'd  
 Their influence malignant when to shower,  
 Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,  
 Should prove tempestuous: to the winds they set  
 Their corners, when with bluster to confound 665  
 Sea, air, and shore, the thunder when to roll  
 With terror through the dark acial hall.  
 Some said he bid his angels turn askance

The poles of earth twice ten degrees and more  
 From the sun's axle; they with labour push'd 670  
 Oblique the centric globe: some say the sun  
 Was bid turn reins from th' equinoctial road  
 Like distant breadth to Taurus with the seven  
 Atlantic Sisters, and the Spartan Twins  
 Up to the Tropic Crab; thence down amain 675  
 By Leo and the Virgin and the Scales,  
 As deep as Capricorn, to bring in change  
 Of seasons to each clime; else had the spring  
 Perpetual smil'd on earth with verdant flowers,  
 Equal in days and nights, except to those 680  
 Beyond the polar circles; to them day  
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun,  
 To recompense his distance, in their sight  
 Had rounded still th' horizon, and not known  
 Or east or west, which had forbid the snow 685  
 From cold-Estotiland, and south as far  
 Beneath Magellan. At that tasted fruit  
 The sun, as from Thyéstean banquet, turn'd  
 His course intended, else how the world  
 Inhabited, though sinless, more than now, 690  
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat?  
 These changes in the Heav'ns, tho' slow, produc'd  
 Like change on sea and land, sidereal blast,  
 Vapour and mist, and exhalation hot,  
 Corrupt and pestilent. Now from the north 695  
 Of Norumbega, and the Samoed shore,  
 Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice,  
 And snow and hail, and stormy gust and flaw,  
 Boreas and Cæcias, and Argestes loud,  
 And Thrasias, rend the woods and seas upturn; 700  
 With adverse blast upturn them from the south  
 Notus and Afer, black with thund'rous clouds  
 From Serraliona; thwart of these as fierce  
 Forth rush the Levant and the Ponent winds,  
 Eurus and Zephyr, with their lateral noise, 705  
 Sirocco, and Libecchio. Thus began  
 Outrage frome lifeless things; but Discord first,  
 Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational,

Death introduc'd through fierce antipathy :  
 Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl, 710  
 And fish with fish ; to graze the herb all leaving,  
 Devour'd each other ; nor stood much in awe  
 Of Man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim  
 Glar'd on him passing. These were from without  
 The growing miseries, which Adam saw 715  
 Already' in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,  
 To sorrow' abandon'd, but worse felt within,  
 And in a troubled sea of passion tost,  
 'Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint.  
 " O miserable of happy' ! is this the end 720  
 Of this new glorious world, and me so late  
 The glory of that glory, who now become  
 Accurs'd of blessed, hide me from the face  
 Of God, whom to behold was then my height  
 Of happiness ! yet well, if here would end 725  
 The misery ; I deserv'd it, and would bear  
 My own deservings ; but this will not serve ;  
 All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,  
 Is propagated curse. O voice once heard  
 Delightfully, ' Increase and multiply,' 730  
 Now death to bear ! for what can I increase  
 Or multiply, but curses on my head ?  
 Who of all ages to succeed, but feeling  
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse  
 My head ? Ill fare our ancestor impure, 735  
 For this we may thank Adam : but his thanks  
 Shall be the execration ; so besides  
 Mine own that bide upon me, all from me  
 Shall with a fierce reflux on me redound ;  
 On me, as on their natural centre light 740  
 Heavy, though in their place. O fleeting joys  
 Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes !  
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay  
 To mould me Man, did I solicit thee  
 From darkness to promote me, or here place 475  
 In this delicious garden ? as my will  
 Concurr'd not to my be'ing, it were but right  
 And equal to reduce me to my dust,

Desirous to resign and render back  
 All I receiv'd, unable to perform 750  
 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold  
 The good I sought not. To the loss of that,  
 Sufficient penalty. why hast thou added  
 The sense of endless woes? Inexplicable  
 Thy justice seems; yet to say truth, too late 755  
 I thus contest; then should have been refus'd  
 Those terms whatever, when they were propos'd:  
 Thou didst accept them; wilt thou' enjoy the good,  
 Then cavil the conditions? and though God  
 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son 760  
 Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,  
 Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not:  
 Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee  
 That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,  
 But natural necessity begot, 765  
 God made thee' of choice his own, and of his own  
 To serve him; thy reward was of his grace,  
 Thy punishment then justly' is at his will.  
 Be' it so, for I submit; his doom is fair,  
 That dust I am, and shall to dust return: 770  
 O welcome hour whenever! why delays  
 His hand to execute what his decree  
 Fix'd on this day? why do I overlive,  
 Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out  
 To deathless pain? how gladly would I meet 775  
 Mortality my sentence, and be earth  
 Insensible, how glad would lay me down  
 As in my mother's lap? there I should rest  
 And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more  
 Would thunder in my ears, no fear of worse 780  
 To me and to my offspring would torment me  
 With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt  
 Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die,  
 Lest that pure breath of life, the spi'rit of Man  
 Which God inspir'd cannot together perish 785  
 With this corporeal clod; then in the grave,  
 Or in some other dismal place, who knows  
 But I shall die a living death? O thought

Horrid, if true! yet why? it was but breath  
 Of life that sinn'd; what dies but what had life 790  
 And sin? the body properly hath neither.  
 All of me then shall die: let this appease  
 The doubt, since human reach no further knows.  
 For though the Lord of all be infinite,  
 Is his wrath also? be it, Man is not so, 795  
 But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise  
 Wrath without end on Man whom death must end?  
 Can he be made deathless death? that were to make  
 Strange contradiction, which to God himself  
 Impossible is held, as argument 800  
 Of weakness, not of power. Will he draw out,  
 For anger's sake, finite to infinite  
 In punish'd Man, to satisfy his rigour  
 Satisfy'd never? that were to extend 805  
 His sentence beyond dust and nature's law  
 By which all causes else according still  
 To the reception of their matter act,  
 Not to the extent of their own sphere. But say  
 That death be not one stroke, as I suppos'd  
 Bereaving sense, but endless misery 810  
 From this day onward, which I feel begun  
 Both in me, and without me, and so last  
 To perpetuity; ay me, that fear  
 Comes thund'ring back with dreadful revolution  
 On my defenceless head; both Death and I 815  
 Am found eternal, and incorporate both,  
 Nor I on my part single. in me all  
 Posterity stands curs'd: fair patrimony  
 That I must leave ye, Sons; O were I able  
 To waste it all myself, and leave ye none! 820  
 So disinherited how would ye bless  
 Me, now your curse! Ah, why should all mankind  
 For one man's fault thus guiltless be condemn'd,  
 If guiltless? But from me what can proceed,  
 But all corrupt, both mind and will deprav'd, 825  
 Not to do only, but to will the same  
 With me? how can they then acquitted stand  
 In sight of God? Him after all disputes

Forc'd I absolve : all my evasions vain,  
 And reasonings, though through mazes, lead me still 830  
 But to my own conviction : first and last  
 On me, me only, as the source and spring  
 Of all corruption, all the blame lights due ;  
 So might the wrath. Fond wish ! couldst thou support  
 That burden, heavier than the earth to bear. 835

Than all the world much heavier, though divided  
 With that bad Woman ? Thus what thou desir'st,  
 And what thou fear'st alike destroys all hope  
 Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable  
 Beyond all past example and future, 840  
 To Satan only like both crime and doom.

O conscience, into what abyss of fears  
 And horrors hast thou driv'n me ; out of which  
 I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd !”

Thus Adam to himself lamented loud 845  
 Through the still night, not now, as ere Man fell,  
 Wholesome and cool, and mild, but with black air  
 Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,  
 Which to his evil conscience represented

All things with double terror : on the ground 850  
 Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground, and oft  
 Curs'd his creation, death as oft accus'd  
 Of tardy execution, since denounc'd

The day of his offence. “ Why comes not death,”  
 Said he, “ with one thrice-acceptable stroke 855  
 To end me ? shall truth fail to keep her word,  
 Justice divine not hasten to be just ?

But death comes not at all. justice divine  
 Mends not her slowest pace for pray'rs or cries.  
 O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bowers, 860  
 With other echo late I taught your shades  
 To answer, and resound far other song.”

Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,  
 Desolate where she sat approaching nigh,  
 Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd : 865  
 But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

“ Out of my sight, thou Serpent ; that name best  
 Befits thee with him leagu'd, thyself as false

And hateful; nothing wants, but that thy shape,  
 Like his, and colour serpentine, may show 870  
 Thy inward fraud, to warn all creatures from thee  
 Henceforth; lest that too heav'nly form, pretended  
 To hellish falsehood, suare them. But for thee  
 I had persisted happy', had not thy pride  
 And wand'ring vanity, when least was safe, 875  
 Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd  
 Not to be trusted, longing to be seen,  
 Though by the Dev'il himself, him overweening  
 To over-reach, but with the Serpent meeting  
 Fool'd and beguil'd, by him thou, I by thee, 880  
 To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,  
 Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,  
 And understood not all was but a show  
 Rather than solid virtue', all but a rib  
 Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears, 885  
 More to the part sinister, from me drawn,  
 Well if thrown out, as supernumerary  
 To my just number found. O why did God,  
 Creator wise, that peopled highest Heaven  
 With Spirits masculine, create at last 890  
 This novelty on earth, this fair defect  
 Of nature, and not fill the world at once  
 With men as Angels without feminine,  
 Or find some other way to generate  
 Mankind? this mischief had not then befall'n, 895  
 And more that shall befall, innumerable  
 Disturbances on earth through female snares,  
 And strait conjunction with this sex: for either  
 He never shall find out fit mate, but such  
 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake; 900  
 Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain  
 Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd  
 By a far worse, or if she love, withheld  
 By parents; or his happiest choice too late  
 Shall meet already link'd and wedlock-bound 905  
 To a fell adversary', his hate or shame:  
 Which infinite calamity shall cause  
 To human life, and household peace confound."

He added not, and from her turn'd ; but Eve,  
 Not so repuls'd, with tears that ceas'd not flowing, 910  
 And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet  
 Fell humble, and embracing them, besought  
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

“Forsake me not thus, Adam ; witness Heaven  
 What love sincere, and reverence in my heart 915  
 I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,  
 Unhappily deceiv'd : thy suppliant  
 I beg, and clasp thy knees ; bereave me not,  
 Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,  
 Thy counsel in this uttermost distress, 920  
 My only strength and stay : forlorn of thee,  
 Whither shall I betake me, where subsist ?  
 While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,  
 Between us two let there be peace, both joining,  
 As join'd in injuries, one enmity 925  
 Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,  
 That cruel Serpent. On me exercise not  
 Thy hatred for this misery befall'n,  
 On me already lost, me than thyself  
 More miserable ; both have sinn'd, but thou 930  
 Against God only, I against God and thee,  
 And to the place of judgment will return,  
 There with my cries importune Heav'n, that all  
 The sentence from thy head remov'd may light  
 On me, sole cause to me of all this woe, 935  
 Me, me only, just object of his ire.”

She ended weeping, and her lowly plight,  
 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault  
 Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in Adam wrought  
 Commiseration ; soon his heart relented 940  
 Tow'ards her, his life so late and sole delight,  
 Now at his feet submissive in distress,  
 Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,  
 His counsel whom she had displeas'd, his aid :  
 As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost, 945  
 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

“Unwary, and too desirous, as before,  
 So now of what thou know'st not, who desir'st

- The punishment all on thyself; alas,  
 Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain 950  
 His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part,  
 And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If prayers  
 Could alter high decrees, I to that place  
 Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,  
 That on my head all might be visited, 955  
 Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiv'n,  
 To me committed and by me expos'd.  
 But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame  
 Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere, but strive,  
 In offices of love, how we may lighten 960  
 Each other's burden, in our share of woe;  
 Since this day's death denounc'd, if ought I see,  
 Will prove no sudden, but a slow-pac'd evil,  
 A long day's dying argument our pain,  
 And to our seed (O hapless seed!) deriv'd." 965
- To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, reply'd.  
 "Adam, by sad experiment I know  
 How little weight my words with thee can find,  
 Found so erroneous, thence by just event 970  
 Found so unfortunate; nevertheless  
 Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place  
 Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain  
 Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart,  
 Living or dying, from thee I will not hide  
 What thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen, 975  
 Tending to some relief of our extremes,  
 Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,  
 As in our evils, and of easier choice.  
 If care of our descent perplex us most,  
 Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd 980  
 By Death at last; and miserable it is  
 To be to others cause of misery,  
 Our own begott'en, and of our loins to bring  
 Into this cursed world a woeful race,  
 That after wretched life must be at last 985  
 Food for so foul a monster; in thy power  
 It lies, yet ere conception to prevent  
 The race unblest, to be'ing yet begot,

Childless thou art, childless remain : so Death  
 Shall be deceiv'd his glut, and with us two 990  
 Be forc'd to satisfy his ravenous maw.  
 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,  
 Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain  
 From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet,  
 And with desire to languish without hope, 995  
 Before the present object languishing  
 With like desire, which would be misery  
 And torment less than none of what we dread ;  
 Then both ourselves and seed at once to free  
 From what we fear for both, let us make short, 1000  
 Let us seek Death, or he not found, supply  
 With our own hands his office on ourselves.  
 Why stand we longer shivering under fears,  
 That shew no end but death. and have the power,  
 Of many ways to die the shortest choosing, 1005  
 Destruction with destruction to destroy ?"

She ended here. or vehement despair  
 Broke off the rest ; so much of death her thoughts  
 Had entertain'd, as dy'd her cheeks with pale.  
 But Adam, with such counsel nothing sway'd, 1010  
 To better hopes his more attentive mind  
 Lab'ring had rais'd, and thus to Eve reply'd.

" Eve thy contempt of life and pleasure seems  
 To argue in thee something more sublime  
 And excellent than what thy mind contemns ; 1015  
 But self-destruction therefore sought, refutes  
 That excellence thought in thee, and implies,  
 Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret  
 For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.  
 Or if thou covet death, as utmost end 1020  
 Of misery, so thinking to evade  
 The penalty pronounc'd, doubt not but God  
 Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire than so  
 To be forestall'd ; much more I fear lest death  
 So snatch'd will not exempt us from the pain 1025  
 We are by doom to pay ; rather such acts  
 Of contumacy' will provoke the Highest  
 To make death in us live. Then let us seek

Some safer resolution, which methinks  
 I have in view, calling to mind with heed 1030  
 Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise  
 'The Serpent's head; piteous amends, unless  
 Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe  
 Satan, who in the serpent hath contriv'd  
 Against us this deceit: to crush his head 1035  
 Would be revenge indeed; which will be lost  
 By death brought on ourselves, or childless days  
 Resolv'd as thou proposest; so our foe  
 Shall 'scape his punishment ordain'd, and we  
 Instead shall double ours upon our heads. 1040  
 No more be mention'd then of violence  
 Against ourselves, and wilful barrenness,  
 That cuts us off from hope, and savours only  
 Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,  
 Reluctance against God and his just yoke 1045  
 Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild  
 And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd  
 Without wrath or reviling; we expected  
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought  
 Was meant by death that day, when lo, to thee 1050  
 Pains only in child-bearing were foretold,  
 And bringing forth, soon recompens'd with joy,  
 Fruit of thy womb: on me the curse aslope  
 Glanc'd on the ground; with labour I must earn  
 My bread; what harm? Idleness had been worse; 1055  
 My labour will sustain me; and lest cold  
 Or heat should injure us, his timely care  
 Hath unbesought provided, and his hands  
 Cloth'd us unworthy, pitying while he judg'd;  
 How much more, if we pray him, will his ear 1060  
 Be open, and his heart to pity' incline,  
 And teach us further by what means to shun  
 'Th' inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow?  
 Which now the sky with various face begins  
 'To shew us in this mountain, while the winds 1065  
 Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks  
 Of these fair spreading trees; which bids us seek  
 Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish

Our limbs benumb'd, ere this diurnal star  
 Leave cold the night, how we his gather'd beams 1700  
 Reflected, may with matter sere foment,  
 Or by collision of two bodies grind  
 The air attrite to fire, as late the clouds  
 Justling or push'd with winds rude in their shock 1704  
 Tine the slant lightning, whose thwart flame, driv'n down,  
 Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine,  
 And sends a comfortable heat from far,  
 Which might supply the sun : such fire to use,  
 And what may else be remedy or cure  
 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought, 1800  
 He will instruct us praying, and of grace  
 Beseeching him, so as we need not fear  
 To pass comodiously this life, sustain'd  
 By him with many comforts, till we end  
 In dust, our final rest and native home. 1085  
 What better can we do, than to the place  
 Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall  
 Before him reverent, and there confess  
 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears  
 Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air, 1090  
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
 Of sorrow' unfeign'd, and humiliation meek ?  
 Undoubtedly he will relent and turn  
 From his displeasure ; in whose look serene,  
 When angry most he seem'd and most severe, 1095  
 What else but favour, grace, and mercy shone ?  
 So spake our father penitent, nor Eve  
 Felt less remorse : they forthwith to the place  
 Repairing where he judg'd them, prostrate fell  
 Before him reverent, and both confess'd 1100  
 Humbly their faults, and pardon begg'd, with tears  
 Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air  
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
 Of sorrow' unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

END OF THE TENTH BOOK.

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

BOOK XI.

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

The Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them. God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise : Sends Michael with a band of Cherubim to dispossess them ; but first to reveal to Adam future things. Michael's coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs : he discerns Michael's approach, goes out to meet him : the Angel denounces their departure. Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits. The Angel leads him up to a high hill, sets before him in vision what shall happen till the flood.

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK XI.

Thus they in lowliest plight repentant stood  
Praying, for from the mercy-seat above  
Prevenient grace descending had remov'd  
The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh  
Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breath'd 5  
Unutterable, which the spirit of prayer  
Inspir'd, and wing'd for Heaven with speedier flight  
Than loudest oratory : yet their port  
Not of mean suitors, nor important less  
Seem'd their petition, than when th' ancient pair 10  
In fables old, less ancient yet than these,  
Deucaliou and chaste Pyrrha, to restore  
The race of mankind drown'd before the shrine  
Of Themis stood devout. To Heav'n their prayers  
Flew up nor miss'd the way, by envious winds 15  
Blown vagabond or frustrate : in they pass'd  
Dimensionless through heav'nly doors ; then clad  
With incense, where the golden altar fum'd,  
By their great intercessor, came in sight  
Before the Father's throne : them the glad Son 20  
Presenting, thus to intercede began.

“ See, Father, what first fruits on earth are sprung  
From thy implanted grace in Man, these sighs  
And pray'rs, which in this golden censer, mix'd

With incense, I thy priest, before thee bring, 25  
 Fruits of more pleasing savour from thy seed  
 Sown with contrition in his heart, than those  
 Which his own hand, manuring all the trees  
 Of Paradise could have produc'd, ere fall'n  
 From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear 30  
 To supplication, hear his sighs though mute ;  
 Unskilful with what words to pray, let me  
 Interpret for him, me his advocate  
 And propitiation ; all his works on me,  
 Good or not good, ingraft, my merit those, 35  
 Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.  
 Accept me, and in me from these receive  
 The smell of peace toward mankind ; let them live  
 Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days  
 Number'd, though sad, till death, his doom, (which I 40  
 To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse)  
 To better life shall yield him, where with me  
 All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss,  
 Made one with me, as I with thee am one."  
 To whom the Father, without cloud, serene, 45  
 " All thy request for Man, accepted Son,  
 Obtain: all thy request was my decree :  
 But longer in that Paradise to dwell,  
 The law I gave to nature him forbids :  
 Those pure immortal elements that know 50  
 No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,  
 Eject him tainted now, and purge him off  
 As a distemper, gross to air as gross,  
 And mortal food, as may dispose him best  
 For dissolution wrought by sin, that first 55  
 Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt  
 Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts  
 Created him endow'd, with happiness  
 And immortality : that fondly lost,  
 This other serv'd but to eternize woe ; 60  
 Till I provided death ; so death becomes  
 His final remedy, and after life  
 Try'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd

By faith and faithful works, to second life,  
 Wak'd in the renovation of the just, 65  
 Resigns him up with Heaven and Earth renew'd.  
 But let us call to synod all the Blest  
 Through Heav'n's wide bounds; from them I will not hide  
 My judgments, how with mankind I proceed,  
 As how with peccant Angels late they saw, 70  
 And in their state, though firm, stood more confirm'd."

He ended, and the Son gave signal high  
 To the bright minister that watch'd; he blew  
 His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps 75  
 When God descended, and perhaps once more  
 To sound at general doom. Th' angelic blast  
 Fill'd all the regions: from their blissful bowers  
 Of amaranthine shade, fountain or spring,  
 By the waters of life, where'er they sat  
 In fellowships of joy, the sons of light 80  
 Hasted, resorting to the summons high,  
 And took their seats; till from his throne supreme  
 Th' Almighty thus pronounc'd his sov'reign will.

"O Sons, like one of us Man is become 85  
 To know both good and evil, since his taste  
 Of that defended fruit; but let him boast  
 His knowledge of good lost, and evil got;  
 Happier had it suffic'd him to have known  
 Good by itself, and evil not at all.

He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite, 90  
 My motions in him; longer than they move,  
 His heart I know, how variable and vain  
 Self-left. Lest therefore his now bolder hand  
 Reach also of the tree of life, and eat,  
 And live for ever, dream at least to live 95  
 For ever, to remove him I decree,  
 And send him from the garden forth to till  
 The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.

"Michael, this my behest have thou in charge; 100  
 Take to thee from among the Cherubim  
 Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the Fiend,

Or in behalf of man, or to invade  
 Vacant possession, some new trouble raise :  
 Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God,  
 Without remorse, drive out the sinful pair, 105  
 From hallow'd ground th' unholy, and denounce  
 To them and their progeny from thence  
 Perpetual banishment. Yet, lest they faint  
 At the sad sentence rigorously urg'd,  
 For I behold them soften'd and with tears 110  
 Bewailing their excess, all terror hide.  
 If patiently thy bidding they obey,  
 Dismiss them not disconsolate ; reveal  
 To Adam what shall come in future days,  
 As I shall thee enlighten ; intermix 115  
 My covenant in the Woman's seed renew'd ;  
 So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace :  
 And on the east side of the garden place,  
 Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,  
 Cherubic watch, and of a sword the flame 120  
 Wide waving, all approach far off to fright,  
 And guard all passage to the tree of life :  
 Lest Paradise a receptacle prove  
 To Spirits foul, and all my trees their prey,  
 With whose stol'n fruit Man once more to delude." 125  
 He ceas'd ; and th' archangelic Pow'r prepar'd  
 For swift descent, with him the cohort bright  
 Of watchful Cherubim ; four faces each  
 Had, like a double Janus, all their shape  
 Spangled with eyes, more numerous than those 130  
 Of Argus, and more wakeful than to drowse,  
 Charm'd with Arcadian pipe, the past'ral reed  
 Of Hermes, or his opiate rod. Meanwhile,  
 To resalute the world with sacred light,  
 Leucothea wak'd, and with fresh dews embalm'd 135  
 The earth, when Adam and first matron Eve  
 Had ended now their orisons, and found  
 Strength added from above, new hope to spring  
 Out of despair, joy but with fear yet link'd ;  
 Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd. 140

" Eve, easily may faith admit that all  
 The good which we enjoy from Heav'n descends ;  
 But that from us ought should ascend to Heaven  
 So prevalent as to concern the mind  
 Of God high-blest, or to incline his will, 145  
 Hard to belief may seem ; yet this will prayer  
 Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne  
 Ev'n to the seat of God. For since I sought  
 By pray'r th' offended Deity to appease,  
 Kneel'd, and before him humbled all my heart, 150  
 Methought I saw him placable and mild,  
 Bending his ear ; persuasion in me grew  
 That I was heard with favour ; peace return'd  
 Home to my breast, and to my memory  
 His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe ; 155  
 Which when not minded in dismay, yet now  
 Assures me that the bitterness of death-  
 Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,  
 Eve rightly call'd, mother of all mankind,  
 Mother of all things living, since by thee, 160  
 Man is to live, and all things live for man."

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek.  
 " Il' worthy I such title should belong  
 To me transgressor, who, for thee ordain'd  
 A help, became thy snare ; to me reproach 165  
 Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise :  
 But infinite in pardon was my Judge,  
 That I, who first brought death on all, am grac'd  
 The source of life : next favourable thou,  
 Who highly thus to' entitle me vouchsaf'st, 170  
 Far other name deserving. But the field  
 To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,  
 Though after sleepless night ; for see the morn,  
 Ail unconcern'd with our unrest, begins  
 Her rosy progress smiling ; let us forth, 175  
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,  
 Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoin'd  
 Laborious, till day droop ; while here we dwell,  
 What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks ?  
 Here let us live, though in a fall'n state, content." 180

So spake, so wish'd much-humbled Eve, but fate  
 Subscrib'd not ; Nature first gave signs, impress'd  
 On bird, beast, air, air suddenly eclips'd  
 After short blush of morn ; nigh in her sight  
 The bird of Jove, stoop'd from his airy tour, 185  
 Two birds of gayest plume before him drove :  
 Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,  
 First hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,  
 Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind ;  
 Direct to the eastern gate was bent their flight. 190  
 Adam observ'd and with his eye the chase  
 Pursuing, not unmov'd to Eve thus spake.

“ O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh  
 Which Heav'n by these mute signs in nature shews,  
 Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn 195  
 Us haply too secure of our discharge  
 From penalty, because from death releas'd  
 Some days ; how long, and what till then our life,  
 Who knows, or more than this that we are dust,  
 And thither must return and be no more ? 200  
 Why else this double object in our sight  
 Of flight pursu'd in th' air, and o'er the ground,  
 One way the self-same hour ? why in the east  
 Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning light  
 More orient in yon western cloud, that draws 205  
 O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,  
 And slow descends, with something heav'nly fraught ?”

He err'd not, for by this the heavenly bands  
 Down from a sky of jasper lighted now  
 In Paradise, and on a hill made halt, 210  
 A glorious apparition, had not doubt  
 And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.  
 Not that more glorious, when the Angels met  
 Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw  
 The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright ; 215  
 Nor that which on the flaming mount appear'd  
 In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,  
 Against the Syrian king, who to surprise  
 One man, assassin-like, had levied war,

War unproclaim'd. The princely Hierarch  
 In their bright stand there left his Pow'rs to seize  
 Possession of the garden ; he alone,  
 To find where Adam shelter'd, took his way,  
 Not unperceiv'd of Adam, who to Eve,  
 While the great visitant approach'd thus spake. 225

“ Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps  
 Of us will soon determine, or impose  
 New laws to be observ'd ; for I descry,  
 From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill,  
 One of the heav'nly host, and by his gait 230  
 None of the meanest, some great Potentate,  
 Or of the Thrones above, such majesty  
 Invests him coming ; yet not terrible,  
 That I should fear, nor sociably mild,  
 As Raphaël, that I should much confide, 235  
 But solemn and sublime, whom not to' offend,  
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.”

He ended ; and the Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,  
 Not in his shape celestial, but as man  
 Clad to meet man ; over his lucid arms 240  
 A military vest of purple flow'd,  
 Livelier than Melibœan, or the grain  
 Of Sarrah, worn by kings and heroes old  
 In time of truce ; Iris had dipt the woof :  
 His starry helm unbuckled shew'd him prime 245  
 In manhood where youth ended ; by his sidé  
 As in a glist'ring zodiac hung the sword,  
 Satan's dire dread, and in his hand the spear.  
 Adam bow'd low ; he kingly, from his state  
 Inclin'd not, but his coming thus declar'd. 250

“ Adam, Heav'n's high behest no preface needs ;  
 Sufficient that thy pray'ers are heard, and Death,  
 Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,  
 Defeated of his seizure many days,  
 Giv'n thee of grace, wherein thou may'st repent, 250  
 And one bad act with many deeds well done  
 May'st cover : well may then thy Lord appeas'd

Redeem thee quite from Death's rapacious claim ;  
 But longer in this Paradise to dwell  
 Permits not ; to remove thee I am come, 260  
 And send thee from the garden forth to till  
 The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil."

He added not, for Adam at the news  
 Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,  
 That all his senses bound ; Eve, who unseen 265  
 Yet all had heard, with audible lament  
 Discover'd soon the place of her retire

" O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death !  
 Must I thus leave thee, Paradise ? thus leave  
 Thee, native soil, these happy walks and shades, 270  
 Fit haunt of Gods ? where I had hope to spend,  
 Quiet though sad, the respite of that day  
 That must be mortal to us both. O flowers,  
 That never will in other climate grow,  
 My early visitation, and my last 275

At ev'n, which I bred up with tender hand  
 From the first opening bud, and gave ye names,  
 Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank  
 Your tribes, and water from the ambrosial fount ?  
 Thee lastly, nuptial bow'r, by me adorn'd - 280  
 With what to sight or smell was sweet, from thee  
 How shall I part, and whither wander down  
 Into a lower world, to this obscure  
 And wild ? how shall we breathe in other air  
 Less pure, accusom'd to immortal fruits ?" 285

Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild.  
 " Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign  
 What justly thou hast lost ; nor set thy heart,  
 Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine :  
 Thy going is not lonely ; with thee goes 290  
 Thy husband ; him to follow thou art bound :  
 Where he abides, think there thy native soil."

Adam by this from the cold sudden damp  
 Recovering, and his scatter'd spi'rits return'd,  
 To Michael thus his humble words address'd. 295

" Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd

Of them the high'est, for such of shape may seem  
 Prince above princes, gently hast thou told  
 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,  
 And in performing end us ; what besides 900  
 Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,  
 Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,  
 Departure from this happy place, our sweet  
 Recess, and only consolation left  
 Familiar to our eyes, all places else 305  
 Inhospitable' appear and desolate,  
 Nor knowing us nor known : and if by prayer  
 Incessant I could hope to change the will  
 Of him who all things can, I would not cease  
 To weary him with my assiduous cries : 310  
 But pray'r against his absolute decree  
 No more avails than breath against the wind,  
 Blown stifling back on him that breathes it forth :  
 Therefore to his great bidding I submit.  
 This most afflicts me, that, departing hence, 315  
 As from his face I shall be hid, depriv'd  
 His blessed count'nance ; here I could frequent  
 With worship place by place where he vouchsaf'd  
 Presence divine, and to my sons relate,  
 On this mount he appear'd, under this tree 320  
 Stood visible, among these pines his voice  
 I heard, here with him at this fountain talk'd :  
 So many grateful altars I would rear  
 Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone  
 Of lustre from the brook, in memory, 325  
 Or monument to ages, and thereon  
 Offer sweet-smelling gums, and fruits and flowers.  
 In yonder nether world where shall I seek  
 His bright appearances, or footstep trace ?  
 For though I fled him angry, yet recall'd 330  
 'To life prolong'd and promis'd race, I now  
 Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts  
 Of glory, and far off his steps adore."

To whom thus Michael with regard benign.

"Adam, thou know'st Heav'n his, and all the Earth,

Not this rock only; his omnipresence fills 336  
 Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,  
 Fomented by his virtual pow'r and warm'd :  
 All th' earth he gave thee to possess and rule,  
 No despicable gift ; surmise not then 340  
 His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd  
 Of Paradise or Eden : this had been  
 Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread  
 All generations, and had hither come,  
 From all the ends of th' earth, to celebrate 345  
 And reverence thee their great progenitor.  
 But this pre-eminence thou' hast lost, brought down  
 To dwell on even ground now with thy sons :  
 Yet doubt not but in valley and in plain  
 God is as here, and will be found alike 350  
 Present, and of his presence many a sign  
 Still following thee, still compassing thee round  
 With goodness and paternal love, his face  
 Express, and of his steps the track divine,  
 Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirm'd,  
 Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent 355  
 To shew thee what shall come in future days  
 To thee and to thy offspring ; good with bad  
 Expect to hear, supernal grace contending  
 With sinfulness of men ; thereby to learn 360  
 True patience, and to temper joy with fear  
 And pious sorrow, equally inur'd  
 By moderation either state to bear,  
 Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead  
 Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure 365  
 Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend  
 This hill ; let Eve (for I have drench'd her eyes)  
 Here sleep helow, while thou to foresight wak'st ;  
 As once thou slept'st, while she to life was form'd."  
 To whom thus Adam gratefully reply'd. 370  
 " Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path  
 Thou lead'st me', and to the hand of Heav'n submit,  
 However chast'ning, to the evil turn  
 My obvious breast, arming to overcome

By suffering, and earn rest from labour won, 375  
 If so I may attain." So both ascend  
 In the visions of God. It was a hill  
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top  
 The hemisphere of earth in clearest ken  
 Stretch'd out to th' amplest reach of prospect lay. 380  
 Not higher that hill, or wider looking round,  
 Whereon for diff'rent cause the Tempter set  
 Our second Adam in the wilderness,  
 To show him all earth's kingdoms and their glory.  
 His eye might there command wherever stood 385  
 City of old or modern fame, the seat  
 Of mightiest empire, from the destin'd walls  
 Of Cambalu, seat of Cathaian Can,  
 And Samarchand, by Oxus, Temir's throne,  
 To Paquin of Sinæn kings and thence 390  
 To Agra and Lahor of great Mogul  
 Down to the golden Chersonese, or where  
 The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since  
 In Hispahan, or where the Russian Ksar  
 In Moscow, or the Sultan in Bizance, 395  
 Turchestan-born; nor could his eye not ken  
 Th' empire of Negus to his utmost port  
 Ercoco, and the less maritime kings  
 Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,  
 And Sofala, thought Ophir, to the realm 400  
 Of Congo, and Angola farthest south;  
 Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount  
 The kingdoms of Almansor, Fez and Sus,  
 Morocco and Algiers, and Tremisen;  
 On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway 405  
 The world; in spi'rit perhaps he also saw  
 Rich Mexico the seat of Montezume,  
 And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat  
 Of Atabalipa, and yet unspoil'd  
 Guiana, whose great city Geryon's sons 410  
 Call El Dorado. But to nobler sights  
 Michael from Adam's eyes the film remov'd,  
 Which that false fruit that promis'd clearer sight

Had bred ; then purg'd with euphrasy and rue  
 The visual nerve, for he had much to see ; 415  
 And from the well of life three drops instill'd  
 So deep the pow'r of these ingredients pierc'd,  
 E'en to the inmost seat of mental sight,  
 That Adam now, enforc'd to close his eyes,  
 Sunk down, and all his spi'rits became entranc'd ; 420  
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand  
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

“ Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold  
 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought 425  
 In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd  
 Th' excepted tree, nor with the Snake conspir'd,  
 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that sin derive  
 Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.”

His eyes he open'd and beheld a field,  
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves 430  
 New reap'd, the other part sheep-walks and folds ;  
 In th' midst an altar as the land-mark stood,  
 Rustic, of grassy sord ; thither anon

A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought  
 First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf, 435  
 Uncull'd, as came to hand ; a shepherd next,  
 More meek, came with the firstlings of his flock  
 Choicest and best ; then sacrificing, laid  
 The inwards and their fat, with incense strow'd,  
 On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd. 440

His offering soon propitious fire from Heaven  
 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steam ;  
 The other's not, for his was not sincere ;  
 Whereat he inly rag'd, and, as they talk'd,  
 Smote him into the midriff with a stone 445  
 That beat out life ; he fell, and deadly pale  
 Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effus'd.  
 Much at that sight was Adam in his heart  
 Dismay'd, and thus in haste to th' Angel cry'd.

“ O Teacher, some great mischief hath befallen  
 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd ; 450  
 Is piety thus and pure devotion paid ?”

T' whom Michaël thus, he also mov'd, reply'd.  
 " These two are brethren, Adam, and to come  
 Out of thy loins ; th' unjust the just hath slain, 455  
 For envy that his brother's offering found  
 From Heav'n acceptance ; but the bloody fact  
 Will be aveng'd, and th' other's faith approv'd  
 Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,  
 Rolling in dust and gore." To which our sire. 460  
 " Alas, both for the deed and for the cause !  
 But have I now seen Death ? Is this the way  
 I must return to native dust ? O sight  
 Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,  
 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel !" 465  
 To whom thus Michaël. Death thou hast seen  
 In his first shape on man ; but many shapes  
 Of Death, and many are the ways that lead  
 To his grim cave, all dismal ; yet to sense  
 More terrible at th' entrance than within. 470  
 Some as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,  
 By fire, flood, famine, by intemp'rance more  
 In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring  
 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew  
 Before thee shall appear ; that thou mayst know 475  
 What misery th' inabstinence of Eve  
 Shall bring on men. Immediately a place  
 Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisome, dark,  
 A lazarus-house it seem'd, wherein were laid  
 Numbers of all diseas'd, all maladies 480  
 Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms  
 Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds,  
 Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,  
 Intestine stone and ulcer, cholic pangs,  
 Demoniac phrenzy, moping melancholy, 485  
 And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,  
 Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence,  
 Dropsies, and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums.  
 Dire was the tossing, deep the groans ; Despair  
 Tended the sick busiest from couch to couch ; 490  
 And over them triumphant Death his dart

Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoc'd  
 With vows, as their chief good, and final hope,  
 Sight so deform what heart of rock could long  
 Dry-ey'd behold? Adam could not, but wept, 495  
 Though not of woman born; compassion quell'd  
 His best of man, and gave him up to tears  
 A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess:  
 And, scarce recovering words, his plaint renew'd,

“O miserable mankind, to what fall  
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!  
 Better end here unborn. Why is life given  
 To be thus wrested from us? rather why  
 Otruded on us thus? who, if we knew 505  
 What we receive, would either not accept  
 Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,  
 Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus  
 Th' image of God in man, created once  
 So goodly and erect, though faulty since,  
 To such unsightly sufferings be debas'd 510  
 Under inhuman pains? Why should not man,  
 Retaining still divine similitude  
 In part, from such deformities be free,  
 And for his Maker's image sake exempt?”

“Their Maker's image,” answer'd Michael, “then 515  
 Forsook them, when themselves they vilify'd  
 To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took  
 His image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,  
 Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve,  
 Therefore so arject is their punishment. 520  
 Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own,  
 Or if his likeness, by themselves defac'd,  
 While they pervert pure nature's healthful rules  
 To loathsome sickness, worthily, since they  
 God's image did not reverence in themselves.” 525

“I yield it just,” said Adam, “and submit.  
 But is there yet no other way, besides  
 These painful passages, how we may come  
 To death, and mix with our connatural dust?”

“There is,” said Michael, if thou well observe 530

The rule of not too much by temp'rance taught,  
 In what thou eat'st and drink'st seeking from thence  
 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight;  
 Till many years over thy head return :  
 So may'st thou live, till like ripe fruit thou drop 535  
 Into thy mother's lap, or be with ease  
 Gather'd not harshly pluck'd, for death mature.  
 This is old age ; but thou must outlive  
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change  
 To wither'd, weak, and grey ; thy senses then 540  
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forego,  
 To what thou hast : and for the air of youth,  
 Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign  
 A melancholy damp of cold and dry,  
 To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume 545  
 The balm of life." - To whom our ancestor.

" Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong  
 Life much, bent rather how I may be quit  
 Fairest and easiest of this cumb'rous charge,  
 Which I must keep till my appointed day 550  
 Of rend'ring up, and patiently attend  
 My dissolution." Michaël reply'd.

" Nor love thy life, nor hate ; but what thou liv'st  
 Live well, how long or short permit to Heaven :  
 And now prepare thee for another sight." 555

He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon  
 Were tents of various hue ; by some were herds  
 Of cattle grazing ; others, whence the sound  
 Of instruments that made melodious chime  
 Was heard, of harp and organ ; and who mov'd 560  
 Their stops and chords were seen ; his volant touch  
 Instinct through all proportions low and high  
 Fled and pursu'd transverse the resonant fugue.  
 In other part stood one who at the forge,  
 Lab'ring, two massy clods of ir'on and brass 565  
 Had melted, (whether found where casual fire  
 Had wasted woods on mountain or in vale,  
 Down to the veins of earth, thence gliding hot  
 To some cave's mouth, or whether wash'd by stream

From under-ground) the liquid ore he drain'd 570  
 Into fit moulds prepar'd ; from which he form'd  
 First his own tools ; then, what might else be wrought  
 Fusile or grav'n in metal. After these,  
 But on the hither side, a different sort 574  
 From the high neighb'ring hills, which was their seat,  
 Down to the plain descended : by their guise  
 Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent  
 To worship God aright, and know his works  
 Not hid, nor those things last which might preserve  
 Freedom and peace to men : they on the plain 580  
 Long had not walk'd, when from the tents behold  
 A bevy of fair women, richly gay  
 In gems and wanton dress ; to th' harp they sung  
 Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on.  
 The men, tho' grave, ey'd them, and let their eyes 585  
 Rove without rein, till in the amorous net  
 Fast caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose ;  
 And now of love they treat, till th' evening star,  
 Love's harbinger, appear'd ; then all in heat  
 They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke 590  
 Hymen then first to marriage rites invok'd :  
 With feast and music all the tents resound  
 Such happy interview and fair event  
 Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flowers,  
 And charming symphonies, attach'd the heart 595  
 Of Adam, soon inclin'd t' admit delight,  
 The bent of nature ; which he thus express'd.  
 " True opener of mine eyes prime Angel blest,  
 Much better seems this vision, and more hope  
 Of peaceful days portends, than those two past ;  
 Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,  
 Here nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends."  
 To whom thus Michael. " Judge not what is best  
 By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet,  
 Created, as thou art, to nobler end, 605  
 Holy and pure, conformity divine.  
 Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents  
 Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race

Who slew his brother ; studious they appear  
 Of arts that polish life, inventors rare, 610  
 Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit  
 Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledge none.  
 Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget ;  
 For that fair female troop thou saw'st, that seem'd  
 Of goddesses so blithe, so smooth, so gay, 615  
 Yet empty of all good wherein consists  
 Woman's domestic honour and chief praise ;  
 Bred only and completed to the taste  
 Of lustful appetence, to sing, to dance,  
 To dress, and troll the tongue, and roll the eye. 620  
 To these that sober race of men, whose lives  
 Religious titled them the sons of God,  
 Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame,  
 Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles,  
 Of these fair atheists, and now swim in joy, 625  
 Ere long to swim at large ; and laugh, for which  
 The world ere long a world of tears must weep."

To whom thus Adam of short joy bereft.  
 "O pity' and shame, that they who to live well  
 Enter'd so fair, should turn aside to tread 630  
 Paths indirect, or in the midway faint !  
 But still I see the tenor of Man's woe  
 Holds on the same, from woman to begin."

"From man's effeminate slackness it begins,"  
 Said th' Angel, "who should better hold his place 635  
 By wisdom, and superior gifts receiv'd.  
 But now prepare thee for another scene."

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread  
 Before him towns, and rural works between,  
 Cities of men with lofty gates and towers, 640  
 Concourse in arms, fierce faces threat'ning war,  
 Giants of mighty bone, and bold emprise :  
 Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,  
 Single or in array of battle rang'd,  
 Both horse and foot, nor idly must'ring stood ; 645  
 One way a band select from forage drives  
 A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine,

From a fat meadow ground ; or fleecy flock,  
 Ewes and their bleating lambs, over the plain  
 Their booty ; scarce with life the shepherds fly, 650  
 But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray ;  
 With cruel tournament the squadrons join ;  
 Where cattle pastur'd late, now scatter'd lies,  
 With carcasses and arms, th' ensanguin'd field  
 Deserted : others to a city strong 655  
 Lay siege, encamp'd : by battery, scale, and mine,  
 Assaulting ; others from the wall defend  
 With dart and javelin, stones and sulphurous fire ;  
 On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.  
 In other part the scepter'd heralds call 660  
 To council in the city gates : anon  
 Grey-headed men and grave, with warriors mix'd,  
 Assemble, and harangues are heard, but soon  
 In factious opposition, till at last  
 Of middle age one rising, eminent 665  
 In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong ;  
 Of justice, of religion, truth and peace,  
 And judgment from above : him old and young  
 Exploded, and had seiz'd with violent hands,  
 Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence 670  
 Unseen amid the throng ; so violence  
 Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,  
 Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.  
 Adam was all in tears, and to his guide  
 Lamenting turn'd full sad ; " O what are these, 675  
 Death's ministers, not men, who thus deal death  
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply  
 Ten thousand fold the sin of him who slew  
 His brother : for of whom such massacre  
 Make they but of their brethren, men of men ? 680  
 But who was that just man, whom had not Heaven  
 Rescued, had in his righteousness been lost ?"  
 To whom thus Michael. " These are the product  
 Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st ;  
 Where good with bad were match'd, who of themselves  
 Abhor to join ; and by imprudence mix'd, 686

Produce prodigious births of body' or mind.  
 Such were these giants, men of high renown;  
 For in those days might only shall be' admir'd,  
 And valour and heroic virtue call'd: 690  
 To overcome in battle, and subdue  
 Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite  
 Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
 Of human glory, and for glory done  
 Of triumph, to be stil'd great conquerors, 695  
 Patrons of mankind, Gods, and sons of Gods,  
 Destroyers rightlier call'd and plagues of men.  
 Thus fame shall be achiev'd, renown on earth,  
 And what most merits fame in silence hid.  
 But he, the sev'enth from thee, whom thou beheldst 700  
 The only righteous in a world perverse,  
 And therefore hated, therefore so beset  
 With foes for daring single to be just,  
 And utter odious truths, that God would come  
 To judge them with his Saints; him the most High, 705  
 Rapt in a balmy cloud, with winged steeds  
 Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God  
 High in salvation and the climes of bliss,  
 Exempt from death; to shew thee what reward  
 Awaits the good, the rest what punishment; 710  
 Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold."  
 He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd;  
 The brazen throat of war had ceas'd to roar;  
 All now was turn'd to jollity and game,  
 To luxury and riot, feast and dance, 715  
 Marrying or prostituting, as besel,  
 Rape or adultery, where passing fair  
 Allur'd them; thence from cups to civil broils.  
 At length a reverend sire among them came,  
 And of their doings great dislike declar'd, 720  
 And testify'd against their ways; he oft  
 Frequented their assemblies, where so met,  
 Triumphs or festivals, and to them preach'd  
 Conversion and repentance, as to souls  
 In prison under judgments imminent; 725

But all in vain : which when he saw, he ceas'd  
 Contending, and remov'd his tents far off :  
 Then from the mountain hewing timber tall  
 Began to build a vessel of huge bulk,  
 Measur'd by cubit, length, and breadth, and height, 730  
 Smear'd round with pitch, and in the side a door  
 Contriv'd, and of provisions laid in large  
 For man and beast : when, lo, a wonder strange !  
 Of every beast, and bird, and insect small,  
 Came sev'ns and pairs, and enter'd in, as taught 735  
 Their order : last the sire, and his three sons  
 With their four wives ; and God made fast the door.  
 Meanwhile the south wind rose, and with black wings  
 Wide hovering, all the clouds together drove  
 From under Heav'n ; the hills to their supply 740  
 Vapour, and exhalation dusk and moist,  
 Sent up amain ; and now the thicken'd sky  
 Like a dark ceiling stood ; down rush'd the rain  
 Impetuous, and continued till the earth  
 No more was seen ; the floating vessel swum 745  
 Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow  
 Rode tilting o'er the waves ; all dwellings else  
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp  
 Deep under water roll'd ; sea cover'd sea,  
 Sea without shore, and in their palaces, 750  
 Where luxury late reign'd sea-monsters whelp'd  
 And stabled ; of mankind, so numerous late,  
 All left, in one small bottom swum imbark'd.  
 How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold  
 The end of all thy offspring, end so sad, 755  
 Depopulation ? thee another flood,  
 Of tears and sorrow' a flood thee also drown'd,  
 And sunk thee as thy sons ; till, gently rear'd  
 By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,  
 Though comfortless, as when a father mourns 760  
 His children, all in view destroy'd at once ;  
 And scarce to th' Angel utter'dst thus thy plaint.  
 " O visions ill foreseen ! better had I  
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had borne

My part of evil only, each day's lot 765  
 Enough to bear; those now, that were dispens'd  
 The burden of many ages, on me light  
 At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth  
 Abortive, to torment me ere their being,  
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek 770  
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall  
 Him or his children; evil he may be sure,  
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,  
 And he the future evil shall no less  
 In apprehension than in substance feel 775  
 Grievous to bear: but that care now is past,  
 Man is not whom to warn; those few, escap'd  
 Famine and anguish, will at last consume  
 Wand'ring that wat'ry desert. I had hope,  
 When violence was ceas'd, and war on earth, 780  
 All would have then gone well, peace would have crown'd,  
 With length of happy days, the race of man;  
 But I was far deceiv'd; for now I see  
 Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.  
 How comes it thus? unfold. celestial Guide, 785  
 And whether here the race of man will end."

To whom thus Michael. "Those whom last thou saw'st  
 In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they  
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent  
 And great exploits, but of true virtue void; 290  
 Who, having spilt much blood, and done much waste,  
 Subduing nations, and achiev'd thereby  
 Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,  
 Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,  
 Surfeit and lust, till wantonness and pride 795  
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace,  
 The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by war,  
 Shall with their freedom lost all virtue lose,  
 And fear of God, from whom their piety feign'd,  
 In sharp contest of battle, found no aid 800  
 Against invaders; therefore cool'd in zeal,

Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,  
 Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords  
 Shall leave them to enjoy; for th' earth shall bear  
 More than enough, that temp'rance may be try'd : 805  
 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd,  
 Justice and temp'rance, truth and faith forgot;  
 One man except, the only son of light  
 In a dark age, against example good,  
 Against allurements, custom, and a world 810  
 Offended; fearless of reproach and scorn,  
 Or violence, he of their wicked ways  
 Shall them admonish, and before them set  
 The paths of righteousness, how much more safe,  
 And full of peace, denouncing wrath to come 815  
 On their impentence; and shall return  
 Of them derided, but of God observ'd  
 The one just man alive; by his command  
 Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheldst,  
 To save himself and household from amidst 820  
 A world devote to universal wrack.  
 No sooner he with them of man and beast  
 Select for life shall in the ark be lodg'd,  
 And shelter'd round, but all the cataracts  
 Of Heav'n, set open on the earth, shall pour 835  
 Rain day and night; all fountains of the deep,  
 Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp  
 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise  
 Above the highest hills: then shall this mount  
 Of Paradise by might of waves be mov'd 830  
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,  
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift,  
 Down the great river to the opening gulf,  
 And there take root an island salt and bare,  
 The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews clang : 835  
 To teach thee that God attributes to place  
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought  
 By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.  
 And now what further shall ensue, behold."  
 He look'd, and saw the ark hull on she flood, 840

Which now abated ; for the clouds were fled,  
 Driv'n by a keen north-wind, that blowing dry  
 Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decay'd ;  
 And the clear sun on his wide wat'ry glass  
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew, 845  
 As after thirst, which made their flowing shrink  
 From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole  
 With soft foot tow'ards the deep, who now had stopt  
 His sluices, as the Heaven his windows shut.  
 The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground 850  
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd.  
 And now the tops of hills as rocks appear ;  
 With clamour thence the rapid currents drive  
 Tow'ards the retreating sea their furious tide.  
 Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies, 855  
 And after him, the surer messenger,  
 A dove sent forth once and again to spy  
 Green tree or ground whereon his foot may light ;  
 The second time returning, in his bill  
 An olive leaf he brings, pacific sign : 860  
 Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark  
 The ancient sire descends with all his train ;  
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,  
 Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds  
 A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow 865  
 Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,  
 Betokening peace from God, and cov'nant new.  
 Whereat the heart of Adam, erst so sad,  
 Greatly rejoic'd, and thus his joy broke forth.  
 " O thou who future things canst represent 870  
 As present, heav'nly Instructor, I revive  
 At this last sight, assur'd that man shall live  
 With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.  
 Far less I now lament for one whole world  
 Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice 875  
 For one man found so perfect and so just,  
 That God vouchsafes to raise another world  
 From him, and all his anger to forget.  
 But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in Heav'n

Distended as the brow of God appears'd, 880  
 Or serve they as a flow'ry verge to bind  
 The fluid skirts of that same wat'ry cloud,  
 Lest it again dissolve and show'r the earth?  
 To whom the Archangel. "Dext'rously thou aim'st;  
 So willingly doth God remit his ire, 885  
 Though late repenting him of man deprav'd,  
 Griev'd at his heart, when looking down he saw  
 The whole earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh  
 Corrupting each their way; y:t those remov'd,  
 Such grace shall one just man find in his sight, 890  
 That he relents, not to blot out mankind,  
 And makes a covenant never to destroy  
 The earth again by flood, nor let the sea  
 Surpass his bounds, nor rain to drown the world  
 With man therein or beast; but when he brings 895  
 Over the earth a cloud, will therein set  
 His triple colour'd bow, whereon to look,  
 And call to mind his cov'nant: day and night,  
 Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost,  
 Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new,  
 Both Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell."

END OF THE ELEVENTH BOOK.

---

---

**PARADISE LOST.**

**BOOK XII.**

---

---

## ARGUMENT.

The Angel Michael continues from the flood to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham; comes by degrees to explain who that Seed of the Woman shall be which was promised Adam and Eve in the fall. His incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension; the state of the church till his second coming. Adam, greatly satisfied and re-comforted by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams composed to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK XII.

As one who in his journey bates at noon,  
Tho' bent on speed ; so here the Archangel paus'd  
Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,  
If Adam ought perhaps might interpose ;  
Then with transition sweet new speech resumes. 5  
" Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end ;  
And man as from a second stock proceed.  
Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive  
Thy mortal sight to fail ; objects divine  
Must needs impair and weary human sense. 10  
Henceforth what is to come I will relate,  
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.  
This second source of men, while yet but few,  
And while the dread of judgment past remains  
Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity, 15  
With some regard to what is just and right,  
Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace,  
Lab'ring the soil and reaping plenteous crop,  
Corn, wine, and oil ; and, from the herd or flock  
Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid, 20  
With large wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred feast,  
Shall spend their days in joy unblam'd, and dwell  
Long time in peace, by families and tribes,  
Under paternal rule : till one shall rise  
Of proud ambitious heart, who, not content 25  
With fair equality, fraternal state,  
Will arrogate dominion undeserv'd  
Over his brethren, and quite dispossess

Concord and law of nature from the earth,  
 Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game)  
 With war and hostile snare such as refuse  
 Subjection to his empire tyrannous : 31  
 A mighty hunter thence he shall be styl'd  
 Before the Lord, as in despite of Heaven,  
 Or from Heav'n claiming second sov'reignty ; 35  
 And from rebellion shall derive his name,  
 Though of rebellion others he accuse.  
 He with a crew, whom like ambition joins  
 With him or under him to tyrannize, 39  
 Marching from Eden tow'ards the west, shall find  
 The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge,  
 Boils out from under ground, the mouth of Hell :  
 Of brick, and of that stuff they cast to build  
 A city' and tow'r, whose top may reach to Heav'n  
 And get themselves a name, lest, far dispers'd 45  
 In foreign lands, their memory be lost,  
 Regardless whether good or evil fame.  
 But God, who oft descends to visit men  
 Unseen, and through their habitations walks  
 To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 50  
 Comes down to see their city, ere the tower  
 Obstruct Heav'n-tow'rs, and in derision sets  
 Upon their tongues a various spi'rit to rase  
 Quite out their native language, and instead  
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown. 55  
 Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud  
 Among the builders ; each to other calls  
 Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,  
 As mock'd, they storm : great laughter was in Heaven,  
 And looking down, to see the hubbub strange 60  
 And hear the din ; thus was the building left  
 Ridiculous, and the work Confusion nam'd."  
 Whereto thus Adam fatherly displeas'd.  
 "O execrable son, so to aspire  
 Above his brethren, to himself assuming 65  
 Authority usurp'd, from God not given :  
 He gave us only over-beast, fish, fowl,

Dominion absolute ; that right we hold  
 By his donation ; but man over men  
 He made not lord ; such title to himself 70  
 Reserving, human left from human free.  
 But this usurper his encroachment proud  
 Stays not on man ; to God his tow'r intends  
 Siege and defiance. Wretched man ! what food  
 Will he convey up thither to sustain 75  
 Himself and his rash army, where thin air  
 Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,  
 And famish him of breath, if not of bread ?”  
 To whom thus Michael. “ Justly thou abhorr'st  
 That son, who on the quiet state of men 80  
 Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue  
 Rational liberty ; yet know withal,  
 Since thy original lapse, true liberty  
 Is lost, which always with right reason dwells  
 Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being. 85  
 Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd,  
 Immediately inordinate desires  
 And upstart passions catch the government  
 From reason, and to servitude reduce  
 Man till then free. Therefore since he permits 90  
 Within himself unworthy pow'rs to reign  
 Over free reason, God in judgment just  
 Subjects him from without to violent lords ;  
 Who oft as undeservedly intrall  
 His outward freedom : tyranny must be, 95  
 Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse,  
 Yet sometimes nations will decline so low  
 From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,  
 But justice, and some fatal curse annex'd,  
 Deprives them of their outward liberty, 100  
 Their inward lost. Witness th' irreverent son  
 Of him who built the ark, who for the shame  
 Done to his father heard this heavy curse,  
 “ Servant of servants,” on his vicious race.  
 Thus will the latter, as the former world, 105  
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last,

Wearing with their iniquities, withdraw  
 His presence from among them, and avert  
 His holy eyes; resolving from thenceforth  
 To leave them to their own polluted ways; 110  
 And one peculiar nation to select  
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoc'd,  
 A nation from one faithful man to spring:  
 Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,  
 Bred up in idol-worship. O that men 115  
 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,  
 While yet the patriarch liv'd, who scap'd the flood,  
 As to forsake the living God, and fall  
 To worship their own work in wood and stone.  
 For Gods! Yet him God the most High vouchsafes 120  
 To call by vision from his father's house,  
 His kindred and false Gods, into a land  
 Which he will show him, and from him will raise  
 A mighty nation, and upon him shower  
 His benediction so, that in his seed 125  
 All nations shall be blest; he straight obeys,  
 Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.  
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith  
 He leaves his Gods, his friends, and native soil  
 Ur of Chaldæa, passing now the ford 130  
 To Haran, after him a cumbrous train  
 Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude;  
 Not waud'ring poor, but trusting all his wealth  
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown,  
 Canaan he now attains; I see his tents 135  
 Pitch'd about Sechem, and the neighb'ring plain  
 Of Moreh; there by promise he receives  
 Gift to his progeny of all that land,  
 From Hamath northward to the desert south,  
 (Things by their names I call, tho' yet unnam'd) 140  
 From Hermon east to the great western sea;  
 Mount Hermon, yonder sea, each place behold  
 In prospect, as I point them on the shore  
 Mount Carmel; here the double-founted stream  
 Jordan, true limit eastward; but his sons 145

Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.  
 This ponder, that all nations of the earth  
 Shall in his seed be blessed; by that seed  
 Is meant thy great deliverer, who shall bruise  
 The serpent's head; whereof to thee anon 150  
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch blest,  
 Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,  
 A son, and of his son a grand-child leaves,  
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown;  
 The grand-child with twelve sons increas'd departs 155  
 From Canaan, to a land hereafter call'd  
 Egypt, divided by the river Nile;  
 See where it flows, disgorging at sev'n mouths  
 Into the sea: to sojourn in that land  
 He comes invited by a younger son 160  
 In time of dearth; a son whose worthy deeds  
 Raise him to be the second in that realm  
 Of Pharaoh: there he dies, and leaves his race  
 Growing into a nation, and now grown  
 Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks 165  
 To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests  
 Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them slaves  
 Inhospitably, and kills their infant males:  
 Till by two brethren (those two brethren call  
 Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim 170  
 His people from inhralment, they return  
 With glory' and spoil back to their promis'd land.  
 But first the lawless tyrant, who denies  
 To know their God, or message to regard,  
 Must be compell'd by signs and judgments dire; 175  
 To blood unshed the rivers must be turn'd;  
 Frogs, lice, and flies, must all his palace fill  
 With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land;  
 His cattle must of rot and murrain die;  
 Botches and blains must all his flesh emboss, 180  
 And all his people; thunder mix'd with hail,  
 Hail mix'd with fire, must rend th' Egyptian sky,  
 And wheel on th' earth, devouring where it rolls;  
 What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,

A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down 185  
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green;  
 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,  
 Palpable darkness, and blot out three days;  
 Last with one midnight stroke all the first born  
 Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds  
 The river-dragon tam'd at length submits 191  
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft  
 Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as ice  
 More harden'd after thaw, till in his rage  
 Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea 195  
 Swallows him with his host, but them lets pass  
 As on dry land between two crystal walls,  
 Aw'd by the rod of Moses so to stand  
 Divided, till his rescued gain their shore.  
 Such wondrous pow'r God to his saints will lend,  
 Though present in his Angel, who shall go 201  
 Before them in a cloud, and pill'ar of fire,  
 By day a cloud, by night a pill'ar of fire,  
 To guide them in their journey, and remove  
 Behind them, while th' obdurate king pursues. 205  
 All night he will pursue, but his approach  
 Darkness defends between till morning watch;  
 Then through the fiery pillar and the cloud  
 God, looking forth, will trouble all his host,  
 And craze their chariot-wheels: when, by command,  
 Moses once more his potent rod extends 211  
 Over the sea; the sea his rod obeys;  
 On their embattled ranks the waves return,  
 And overwhelm their war; the race elect  
 Safe towards Canaan, from the shore advance 215  
 Through the wild desert, not the readiest way,  
 Lest ent'ring on the Canaanite alarm'd  
 War terrify them inexpert, and fear  
 Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather  
 Inglorious life with servitude; for life 220  
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet  
 Untrain'd in arms, wherè rashness leads not on.  
 This also shall they gain by their delay

In the wide wilderness, there they shall found  
 Their government, and their great senate choose 225  
 Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordain'd :  
 God from the mount of Sinai, whose gray top  
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself  
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets sound,  
 Ordain them laws ; part such as appertain 230  
 To civil justice, part religious rites  
 Of sacrifice, informing them, by types  
 And shadows, of that destin'd Seed to bruise  
 The Serpent, by what means he shall achieve  
 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God 235  
 To mortal ear is dreadful ; they beseech  
 That Moses might report to them his will,  
 And terror cease ; he grants what they besought,  
 Instructed that to God is no access  
 Without mediator whose high office now 340  
 Moses in figure bears to introduce  
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,  
 And all the prophets in their age the times  
 Of great Messi'ah shall sing. Thus laws and rites  
 Establish'd, such delight hath God in men, 245  
 Obedient to his will, that he vouchsafes  
 Among them to set up his tabernacle,  
 The holy One with mortal men to dwell ;  
 By his prescript a sanctuary is fram'd  
 Of cedar, overlaid with gold, therein 250  
 An ark, and in the ark his testimony,  
 The records of his covenant, over these  
 A mercy seat of gold between the wings  
 Of two bright Cherubim ; before him burn  
 Sev'n lamps, as in a zodiac representing 255  
 The heavenly fires ; over the tent a cloud  
 Shall rest by day, fiery gleam by night,  
 Save when they journey, and at length they come,  
 Conducted by his Angel to the land  
 Promis'd to Abraham and his seed. The rest 260  
 Were long to tell, how many battles fought,  
 How many kings destroy'd, and kingdoms won,

Or how the sun shall in mid Heav'n stand still  
 A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,  
 Man's voice commanding, ' Sun in Gibeon stand, 266  
 And thou moon in the vale of Adjalon,  
 Till Israel overcome ;' so call the third  
 From Abraham, son of Isaac, and from him  
 His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win.\*  
 Here Adam interpos'd. " O sent from Heaven, 270  
 Enlightner of my darkness, gracious things  
 Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concern  
 Just Abraham and his seed : now first I find  
 Mine eyes true opening, and my heart much eas'd, 273  
 Ere while perplex'd with thoughts what would become  
 Of me and all mankind ; but now I see  
 His day, in whom all nations shall be blest,  
 Favour unmerited by me, who sought  
 Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.  
 This yet I apprehend not, why to those, 280  
 Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth,  
 So many and so various laws are given ;  
 So many laws argue so many sins  
 Among them ; how can God with such reside ?"  
 To whom thus Michael. " Doubt not but that sin 285  
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot ;  
 And therefore was law given them to evince  
 Their natural pravity, by stirring up  
 Sin against law to fight : that when they see  
 Law can discover sin, but not remove, 290  
 Save by those shadowy expiations weak,  
 The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude  
 Some blood more precious must be paid for man,  
 Just for unjust that in such righteousness,  
 To them by faith imputed, they may find 295  
 Justification towards God, and peace  
 Of conscience, which the law by ceremonies  
 Cannot appease, nor man the mortal part  
 Perform, and, not performing, cannot live.  
 So law appears imperfect, and but given 300  
 With purpose to resign them in full time

Up to a better covenant, disciplin'd  
 From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,  
 From imposition of strict laws to free  
 Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear 305  
 To filial, works of law to works of faith.  
 And therefore shall not Moses, though of God  
 Highly belov'd, being but the minister  
 Of law, his people into Canaan lead ;  
 But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call, 310  
 His name and office bearing, who shall quell  
 The adversary Serpent, and bring back,  
 Through the world's wilderness, long wander'd man  
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.  
 Meanwhile they, in their earthly Canaan plac'd, 315  
 Long time shall dwell and prosper ; but when sins  
 National interrupt their public peace  
 Provoking God to raise them enemies ;  
 From whom as oft he saves them penitent,  
 By judges first, then under kings ; of whom 320  
 The second, both for piety renown'd,  
 And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive  
 Irrevocable, that his regal throne  
 For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing  
 All prophecy, that of the royal stock 325  
 Of David (so I name this king) shall rise  
 A Son, the Woman's seed to thee foretold,  
 Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust  
 All nations, and to kings foretold, of kings  
 The last, for of his reign shall be no end. 330  
 But first a long succession must ensue,  
 And his next son, for wealth and wisdom fam'd,  
 The clouded ark of God, till then in tents  
 Wand'ring, shall in a glorious temple' inshrine.  
 Such follow him as shall be register'd 335  
 Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scroll,  
 Whose soul idolatries, and other faults,  
 Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense  
 God, as to leave them, and expose their land,  
 Their city', his temple, and his holy ark, 340

With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey  
 To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st  
 Left in confusion, Babylon thence call'd.  
 There in captivity he lets them dwell  
 The space of sev'nty years, then brings them back, 345  
 Rememb'ring mercy, and his covenant sworn  
 To David, stablis'd as the days of Heaven.  
 Return'd from Babylon, by leave of kings  
 Their lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God  
 They first re-edify, and for a while 350  
 In mean estate live moderate, till grown  
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow ;  
 But first among the priests dissention springs,  
 Men who attend the altar, and should most  
 Endeavour peace: their strife pollution brings 355  
 Upon the temple' itself; at last they seize  
 The sceptre, and regard not David's sons,  
 Then lose it to a stranger, that the true  
 Anointed king Messiah might be born  
 Barr'd of his right; yet at his birth a star, 360  
 Unseen before in Heav'n proclaims him come,  
 And guides the eastern sages, who enquire  
 His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold.  
 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells  
 To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night; 365  
 They gladly thither haste, and by a quire  
 Of squadron'd Angels hear his carol sung,  
 A virgin is his mother, but his sire  
 The pow'r of the most High; he shall ascend  
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign 370  
 With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heavens.'  
 He ceas'd, discerning Adam with such joy  
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief been dew'd in tears,  
 Without the vent of words, which these he breath'd.  
 " O prophet of glad tidings, finisher 375  
 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand  
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in vain;  
 Why our great expectation should be call'd  
 The seed of Woman. Virgin Mother, hail,

High in the love of Heav'n, yet from my loins 380  
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son  
 Of God most High; so God with man unites.  
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise  
 Expect with mortal pain: say where and when  
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel?"  
 To whom thus Michael. "Dream not of their fight,  
 As of a duel, or the local wounds  
 Of head or heel: not therefore joins the Son  
 Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil  
 Thy enemy; nor so is overcome 390  
 Satan, whose fall from Heav'n a deadlier bruise,  
 Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound:  
 Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,  
 Not by destroying Satan, but his works  
 In thee and in thy seed. Nor can this be, 395  
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,  
 Obedience to the law of God, impos'd  
 On penalty of death, and suffering death,  
 The penalty to thy transgression due,  
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow: 400  
 So only can high justice rest appaid.  
 The law of God exact he shall fulfil  
 Both by obedience and by love, though love  
 Alone fulfil the law; thy punishment  
 He shall endure by coming in the flesh 405  
 To a reproachful life and cursed death,  
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe  
 In his redemption, and that his obedience  
 Imputed becomes theirs by faith, his merits  
 To save them, not their own, tho' legal works 410  
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,  
 Seiz'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd  
 A shameful and accurs'd, nail'd to the cross  
 By his own nation, slain for bringing life;  
 But to the cross he nails thy enemies, 415  
 The law that is against thee, and the sins  
 Of all mankind, with him there crucify'd,  
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust

In this his satisfaction ; so he dies,  
 But soon revives ; death over him no power 420  
 Shall long usurp ; ere the third dawning light  
 Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise  
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,  
 Thy ransom paid, which man from death redeems,  
 His death for man, as many as offer'd life 425  
 Neglect not, and the benefit embrace  
 By faith not void of works. This God-like act  
 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have dy'd,  
 In sin for ever lost from life ; this act 429  
 Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength,  
 Defeating sin and death, his two main arms,  
 And fix far deeper in his head their stings  
 Than temp'ral death shall bruise the victor's heel,  
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death-like sleep,  
 A gentle wafting to immortal life. 435  
 Nor after resurrection shall he stay  
 Longer on earth than certain times to' appear  
 To his disciples, men who in his life  
 Still follow'd him ; to them shall leave in charge 440  
 To teach all nations what of him they learn'd  
 And his salvation, them who shall believe  
 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign  
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to life  
 Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,  
 For death, like that which the Redeemer dy'd. 445  
 All nations they shall teach ; for from that day  
 Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins  
 Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons  
 Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world ;  
 So in his seed all nations shall be blest. 450  
 Then to the Heav'n of Heav'n's he shall ascend  
 With victory, triumphing through the air  
 Over his foes and thine ; there shall surprise,  
 The Serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains  
 Thro' all his realm, and there confounded leave ; 455  
 Then enter into glory, and resume  
 His seat at God's right hand ; exalted high

Above all names in Heav'n ; and thence shall come,  
 When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,  
 With glory' and pow'r to judge both quick and dead, 460  
 To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward  
 His faithful, and receive them into bliss,  
 Whether in Heav'n or Earth, for then the Earth  
 Shall all be Paradise, far happier place  
 Than this of Eden, and far happier days." 465

So spake the Arch-Angel Michaël, then paus'd,  
 As at the world's great period ; and our sire,  
 Replete with joy and wonder, thus reply'd.

" O Goodness infinite, goodness immense !  
 That all this good of evil shall produce, 470  
 And evil turn to good ; more wonderful  
 Than that which by creation first brought forth  
 Light out of darkness ! Full of doubt I stand,  
 Whether I should repent me now of sin  
 By me done and occasion'd, or rejoice 475  
 Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring,  
 To God more glory, more good will to men  
 From God, and over wrath grace shall abound.

But say, if our deliverer up to Heaven  
 Must reascend, what will betide the few 480  
 His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,  
 The enemies of truth ? who then shall guide  
 His people, who defend ? will they not deal  
 Worse with his followers than with him they dealt ?"

" Be sure they will," said th' Angel ; " but from Heaven  
 He to his own a Comforter will send, 481

The promise of the Father, who shall dwell  
 His Spi'rit within them, and the law of faith,  
 Working, thro' love, upon their hearts shall write,  
 To guide them in all truth, and also arm 490  
 With spiritual armour, able to resist

Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts,  
 What man can do against them, not afraid,  
 Though to the death, against such cruelties  
 With inward consolations recompens'd, 495

And oft supported so as shall amaze  
 Their proudest persecutors: for the Spirit  
 Pour'd first on his Apostles, whom he sends  
 To evangelize the nations, then on all  
 Baptiz'd, shall them with wondrous gifts endue 500  
 To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,  
 As did their Lord before them. Thus they win  
 Great numbers of each nation to receive  
 With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n: at length,  
 Their ministry perform'd; and race well run, 505  
 Their doctrine and their story written left,  
 They die; but in their room, as they forewarn,  
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,  
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heaven  
 To their own vile advantages shall turn 510  
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth  
 With superstitions and traditions taint,  
 Left only in those written records pure,  
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.  
 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names, 515  
 Places and titles, and with these to join  
 Secular pow'r, though feigning still to act  
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating  
 The Spi'rit of God, promis'd alike and given  
 To all believers; and from that pretence, 520  
 Spiritual laws by carnal pow'r shall force  
 On every conscience; laws which none shall find  
 Left them inroll'd, or what the Spi'rit within  
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then  
 But force the Spirit of grace itself, and bind 525  
 His consort liberty? what, but unbuild  
 His living temples, built by faith to stand,  
 Their own faith not another's? for on earth  
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard  
 Infallible; Yet many will presume: 530  
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise  
 On all who in the worship persevere  
 Of spi'rit and truth; the rest, far greater part,  
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms

Religion satisfy'd ; truth shall retire 535  
 Bestruck with sland'rous darts, and works of faith  
 Rarely be found : so shall the world go on,  
 To good malignant, to bad men benign,  
 Under her own weight groaning, till the day  
 Appear of respiration to the just, 540  
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return  
 Of him so lately promis'd to thy aid,  
 The Woman's Seed, obscurely then foretold,  
 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord  
 Last in the clouds from Heav'n to be reveal'd 545  
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve  
 Satan with his perverted world, then raise  
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,  
 New Heav'ns, new Earth, ages of endless date,  
 Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love, 550  
 To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss."

He ended and thus Adam last reply'd.  
 " How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,  
 Measur'd this transient world, the race of time,  
 Till time stand fix'd ? beyond is all abyss, 555  
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.  
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,  
 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill  
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain ;  
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire. 560  
 Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,  
 And love with fear the only God, to walk  
 As in his presence, ever to observe  
 His providence, and on him sole depend,  
 Merciful over all his works, with good 565  
 Still overcoming evil, and by small  
 Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak  
 Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise  
 By simply meek ; that suffering for truth's sake  
 Is fortitude to highest victory, 570  
 And to the faithful death the gate of life ;  
 Taught this by his example, whom I now  
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest."

To whom thus also th' Angel last reply'd.  
 " This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd the sum  
 Of wisdom ; hope no higher, through all the stars  
 Thou knew'st thy name, and all th' ethereal pow'rs,  
 All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,  
 Or works of God in Heav'n, air, earth, or sea,  
 And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst, 580  
 And all the rule, one empire ; only add  
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add faith,  
 Add virtue, patience, temperance, add love,  
 By name to come call'd charity, the soul  
 Of all the rest : then wilt thou not be loth 585  
 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess  
 A Paradise within thee, happier far.  
 Let us descend now therefore from this top  
 Of speculation ; for the hour precise  
 Exacts our parting hence ; and see the guards, 590  
 By me encamp'd on yonder hill, expect  
 Their motion, at whose front a flaming sword,  
 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round :  
 We may no longer stay. Go, waken Eve ;  
 Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd 595  
 Portending good, and all her spi'rits compos'd  
 To meek submission : thou at season fit  
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,  
 Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,  
 The great deliverance by her seed to come 600  
 (For by the Woman's seed) on all mankind ;  
 That ye may live, which will be many days,  
 Both in one faith unanimous though sad,  
 With cause for evils past, yet much more cheer'd  
 With meditation on the happy end." 605

He ended, and they both descend the hill :  
 Descended, Adam to the bow'r where Eve  
 Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak'd ;  
 And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd.  
 " Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I know ;  
 For God is also' in sleep, and dreams advise, 611

Which he hath sent propitious, some great good  
 Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress  
 Wearied I fell asleep : but now lead on ;  
 In me is no delay ; with thee to go 615  
 Is to stay here ; without thee here to stay,  
 Is to go hence unwilling ; thou to me  
 Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou,  
 Who for my wilful crime art banish'd hence.  
 This further consolation, secure 620  
 I carry hence ; though all by me is lost,  
 Such favour I unworthy am vouchsaf'd,  
 By me the promis'd Seed shall all restore."

So spake our mother Eve, and Adam heard  
 Well pleas'd, but answer'd not ; for now too nigh 625  
 Th' Arch-Angel stood, and from the other hill  
 To their fix'd station, all in bright array,  
 The Cherubim descended ; on the ground  
 Gliding meteorous, as evening mist  
 Ris'n from a river o'er the marish glides, 630  
 And gathers ground fast at the lab'rer's heel  
 Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd  
 The brandish'd sword of God before them blaz'd  
 Fierce as a comet ; which with torrid heat,  
 And vapour as the Libyan air adust, 635  
 Began to parch that temp'rate clime ; whereat  
 In either hand the hast'ning Angel caught  
 Our ling'ring parents, and to th' eastern gate  
 Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast  
 To the subjected plain ; then disappear'd. 640  
 They looking back, all th' eastern side beheld  
 Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,  
 Wav'd over by that flaming brand the gate  
 With dreadful faces throng'd and fiery arms :  
 Some natural tears they dropt, but wip'd them soon. 645  
 The world was all before them, where to choose  
 Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.  
 They hand in hand, with wand'ring steps and slow,  
 Through Eden took their solitary way.

THE END.

The first part of the book is a history of the  
 city of London from its foundation to the  
 present time. It is written in a plain and  
 simple style, and is very interesting and  
 useful. The second part is a description of  
 the city and its environs, and is also very  
 interesting and useful. The third part is a  
 history of the city of London from the  
 year 1711 to the present time. It is  
 written in a plain and simple style, and  
 is very interesting and useful. The fourth  
 part is a description of the city and its  
 environs, and is also very interesting and  
 useful. The fifth part is a history of the  
 city of London from the year 1711 to the  
 present time. It is written in a plain and  
 simple style, and is very interesting and  
 useful. The sixth part is a description of  
 the city and its environs, and is also very  
 interesting and useful. The seventh part is  
 a history of the city of London from the  
 year 1711 to the present time. It is  
 written in a plain and simple style, and  
 is very interesting and useful. The eighth  
 part is a description of the city and its  
 environs, and is also very interesting and  
 useful. The ninth part is a history of the  
 city of London from the year 1711 to the  
 present time. It is written in a plain and  
 simple style, and is very interesting and  
 useful. The tenth part is a description of  
 the city and its environs, and is also very  
 interesting and useful.

# INDEX.

**NOTE.** The numeral letters refer to the Book, the figures to the Line.

- AARON** and **Moses**, their mission to Egypt, xii. 170.
- Abdiel**, a Seraph, his opposition to Satan, respecting the revolt of the Angels, v. 803. his fidelity, v. 896. abandons the party of Satan, vi. 1. soliloquy on viewing him at their head, vi. 114. his conquest of Ariel, Arioch, and Ramiel, vi. 369.
- Abel** and **Cain**, their story. xi. 429.
- Abraham** and the patriarchs, story of, xii. 113.
- Adam** and **Eve**, general description of them, iv. 288. more minutely described, iv. 295. their state of innocence, iv. 312 492 738. v. 211 303. viii. 510. entertainment of the angel Raphael, v. 313 391. their nuptial bed described, iv. 708. their behaviour after the fall, and on finding themselves naked, ix. 1004 1051. attempt to avoid God, x. 97. appear before him, x. 109. their expulsion from Paradise, xii. 265. Adam's discourse with her on the prohibition of the tree of knowledge, iv. 411. on viewing her sleeping, v. 8. his answer to her dream relative to Satan's first temptation, v. 94. his discourse in the bower with Raphael, v. 460. his creation and dominion, ix. 524. his first view of the Divine Presence, &c. viii. 311. his speech to God on his solitude in Paradise, viii. 357. his passion for Eve, viii. 521. discourses with her on Satan's subtlety, ix. from 205 to 384. soliloquy on her transgression, ix. 896. resolves to die with her, ix. 907. eats the forbidden fruit, ix. 996. solicits her to submit to sexual pleasures, and their consequences, ix. 1081 1016. speech to her on their fall, &c. ix. 1067. sentence on him, x. 197. reflects on the immortality of the soul, &c. x. 782. his resolution against the advice of Eve to commit suicide, x. 1028. behaviour on receiving the message for their expulsion, xi. 263.
- Adramelech** and **Asmalia**, fallen angels, their defeat, vi. 365.
- Amaranth**, a flower, transplanted to Heaven, iii. 352.
- Ambition** censured, ii. 482.
- Angels** obey God from choice, v. 535. engagement of the celestial party against Satan, vi. 202 634. Their song

## INDEX.

- on the creation, vii. 180 252 557 602.** their re-ascent to Heaven on Adam's fall, xi. 17. appointed to drive Adam from Paradise, xi. 127. execution of that office, xii. 626.
- Angels, the fallen, their names, i. 374.** pursuits, ii. 528, engagement vi. 202. defeat and expulsion from Heaven, vi. 831—877. transformed into serpents, &c. x. 519 547.
- Apostles, their mission; &c, xii. 439.** their successors described, xii. 508.
- Azazel, Satan's standard bearer, i. 334.**
- Babel, its building, and the confusion of languages thence arising, xii. 38 48.**
- Battle between the Angels described, vi. 202 to 877.**
- Beelzebub described, ii. 299.** excites an attempt on the world, ii. 245.
- Belial, speeches of, ii, 119. vi. 620.**
- Blasts, originated from the fall of Adam, x, 692.**
- Bridge from the gates of Hell over Chaos to the world, x. 293.**
- Cain and Abel, their story, xi. 429.**
- Cham, his story, xii. 101.**
- Chance, explosion of the general idea respecting it, ii. 909.**
- Chaos described, ii. 890. vii. 210.** its limits since the fall of the angels, ii. 998. its state before that event, v. 577.
- Church, hirelings in it compared with the devil in Paradise, iv. 192.**
- Conjugal love praised, iv, 750 765.** definition of it, viii. 589. a reciprocal duty, ix. 357.
- Conjugal union, its reasons and obligations, viii. 494. ix. 965 961.**
- Conscience, the umpire of God in man, iii. 194.** its terrors, iv. 23. x. 842. censure of laws to enforce it, xii. 515.
- Creation, the universal, description of it, iii. 708. vii. 221.**
- Creatures in Paradise described, iv. 340.** their discord a consequence of the fall, x. 707.
- Dagon, a fallen angel, some account of, i. 457.**
- Damned, a description of the vicissitudes of their torments ii. 596.**
- David, why his throne is eternal, xii. 320.**
- Day and night in Heaven, description of, vi. 4,**

## INDEX.

- Death and Sin**, their post at the gates of Hell, before the fall, ii. 688. their union, x. 249. their meeting with Satan on his return to Hell, x. 326. their arrival at Paradise, x. 585, subsequent conduct in the world, x. 610.
- Death**, description of, ii. 666. its parentage, ii. 727. its birth, ii. 777. its answers to Sin, x. 264 596. of the body, its causes and variety, xi. 466 to 493. its terrors more imaginary than real, xi. 469. the gate of life, xii. 571. eternal, considerations on, x. 808.
- Deluge**, see Noah.
- Despair**, its degrees, &c. iv. 108.
- Devils**, why excluded from grace, iii. 129.
- Discord** censured, ii, 496. the daughter of Sin, x, 707.
- Dominion**, absolute amongst men, unjustifiable, xii. 64.
- Dreams** illusory, iv. 799. natural, v. 110. divine, xii. 611.
- Eagle**, a bird of prey, one effect of Adam's fall, xi. 185.
- Earth**, its creation, iii, 715. vii. 231. its separation from the waters described, vii. 276. speculations on its motion, or that of the heavens, censured, viii. 70. an universal paradise at the coming of the Messiah, xii. 463.
- Eden**, see Paradise.
- Egypt**, plagues of xii. 173.
- Election** asserted, iii, 183.
- Elements** their dependence upon each other, xi. 415.
- Enoch**, his story, translation, &c. xi. 664 700
- Eve**, see Adam and Eve
- Eve** particularly described, &c. iv. 712. v. 379. viii. 46 470 482 596. ix. 386 431 457 489 538 603 896. her formation from Adam, viii. 460. her behaviour on seeing him, viii. 500. discourses with Satan, ix. 552 732. her temptation of Adam, ix, 856. her speeches and answers to Adam on being accused, x. 909 937 966. xi. 162. xii. 610.
- Evening** described, iv. 598.
- Evil** blameless, if unapproved by thought, v. 117.
- Experience**, a guide to wisdom, ix. 807.
- Faith in Christ**, what kind of, is eternal life, xii. 420. censure of laws to enforce it, xii. 515.
- Fancy**, its office, v. 100. a faculty of the soul, viii. 460
- Fame**, censure of the common idea of it, xi. 688.
- Fate**, the will of of the Almighty, vii. 170.

## INDEX.

- Fig-tree, from which aprons were made, described, ix. 1101.
- Firmament described, vii. 261.
- Fish, their creation described, vii. 391.
- Flaming sword, description of, xii. 632.
- Flood, or deluge, see Noah.
- Freedom, effects of its loss, upon virtue, &c. xi. 797.
- Free-grace, defined, &c. iii. 173 227.
- Free-will asserted, iii. 95. v. 235 520. viii. 635. ix. 350. x. 43. the image of God, viii. 440.
- Fruition, carnal, its passion censured, viii. 579.
- Gabriel, the chief of the guardian Angels, his station, &c. iv. 448. undertakes to detect Satan, iv. 575. his speeches to the Angels, iv. 866. to Satan, iv. 877. his prowess, &c. in the battle, vi. 354.
- Glory, or fame, the general idea of it censured, xi. 688.
- God the Father. contemplating his works, &c. iii. 56. his speech to God the Son on the designs of Satan, iii. 80. proposes the manner of redemption, iii. 203. and decrees his resurrection, 303. attributes of God the Father, iii. 372. his speech to the celestial hierarchy, v. 600. his speeches to the Son, the Angels, &c. v. 719. vi. 29. vii. 139. x. 614. xi. 84 99.
- God the Son, at the right hand of the Father. iii. 62. the second Adam, iii. 285. his attributes, iii. 383. the Messiah, vi. 718 881. his answers to Adam, the Father, &c. vi. 733. viii. 369 398 437. x. 68. his re-ascent and intercession for Adam, x. 224.
- God, what kind of adoration most acceptable to him, iv. 756. to be contemplated in the works of creation, v. 508. his absolute decrees, omnipresence, &c. xi. 311 335. to obey and depend on him, the sum of knowledge, xii. 557.
- Gospel, how it is to be understood, xii. 511.
- Grace of God, its object, and why devils are excluded from it, iii. 129. The spirit of it, &c. xii. 525.
- Gratitude, when exerted, a discharge of its debt. iv. 55.
- Gunpowder, guns, &c. their invention attributed to the devil, vi. 478 484.
- Heaven and earth, their final renovation by fire, xi. 898. xii. 547. subsequent happiness therein, xii. 463 549.

## INDEX.

- Heaven, its joys described, iii. 344. its gate, iii. 501**  
 v. 253. passage thence to the world, iii. 526. its cre-  
 ation, iii. 716. the study of it how necessary, viii. 66.  
 speculations on its motions censured, viii. 70. its situ-  
 ation with respect to the world and hell, x. 320.
- Hell, description of, i. 60 223. ii. 587 618. its gates, ii. 645.**  
 its situation, &c. x. 322.
- Hierarchies of heaven, before the revolt, described, v. 579.**
- Holy-ghost its diffusion, &c. at the creation, vii. 195.**  
 promised and given to all believers, xii. 518.
- Hymns to light, iii. 1. to God the Father and Son, iii. 372.**  
 on conjugal love, iv. 750. on the creation, vii. 180.  
 252 557 602.
- Hypocrisy only visible to God, iii, 682.**
- Hypocrites, their first example in Satan. ix, 121.**
- Idolatry, its origin, i. 364. that of the postdiluvian world,**  
 xii. 115.
- Jealousy, the hell of lovers, v. 449.**
- Innocence, its state described, iv. 312 492 736. v. 211**  
 303 443. viii. 40 510.
- Invocations of the author, i. 6. iii. 51. vii. 1. xi. 20.**
- Israelites, relation of their bondage and release, xli. 163.**  
 their settlement, &c. in the wilderness, xii. 223. in Ca-  
 naan, xii. 260. their captivity in Babylon, xii. 335. on  
 their return, till the birth of the Messiah, xii. from 345  
 to 359.
- Isis, a fallen angel, i, 478.**
- Ithuriel, an Angel of Paradise, iv, 738. detects Satan's**  
 attempt on Eve, iv. 810.
- Knowledge, the result of reason, v. 100. of future events,**  
 the desire of it censured, xi. 770. its sum the love  
 and fear of God, xii. 557.
- Leviathan described, i. 201.**
- Liberty, consequences of its loss, xi. 797.**
- Life, long, how attainable, xi. 530.**
- Light, its creation described, vii. 243.**
- Lightning, how produced, x. 1073.**
- Love, conjugal, distinct from that of an amour, iv. 763.**  
 defined, vii. 589. its food, ix. 239. its object, ix. 241.
- Lucifer, why a name of Satan, x. 425.**

## INDEX.

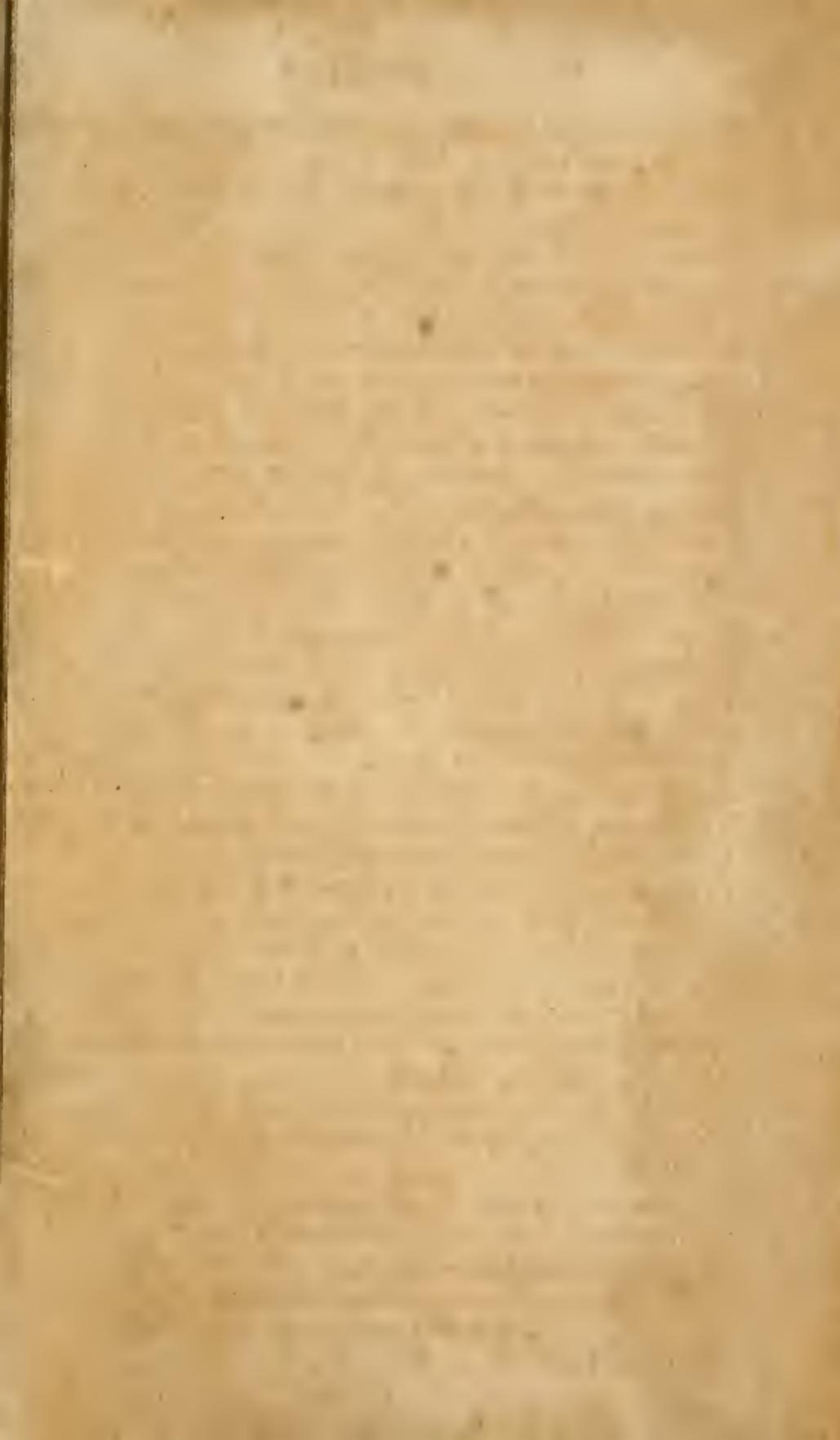
- Lust, its solace, ix. 1042.
- Mammon, a fallen angel, i. 628. his speech in Satan's council, ii. 229.
- Man, fallen, why the object of grace, iii. 130. his long resistance of it exclusive, iii. 198. created to supply the loss of the fallen angels, iii. 667. ix. 143. his creation described, vii. 524. his superiority over woman decreed by God. x. 145 195. indulgence in his appetites disfigures not God's image, ix. 515. the true end of his creation, xi. 603. his absolute dominion over his brethren an usurpation, xii. 64.
- Matches, conjugal, censure of the modern, viii. 57. x. 888.
- Michael, the arch-angel, his appointment in the celestial army, vi. 44, his prowess, combats, speeches, answers, &c. See various parts of the books, from vi. to xii.
- Mind, its force, i. 254. its food, ix. 237.
- Moloch, fallen, i. 292 speech, ii. 51. defies Gabriel, vi. 357.
- Moon, on its supposed inhabitants, iii. 459. its office, iii. 726. rising, iv. 606. its creation, &c. vii. 356 375 379.
- Morning in heaven, description of, vi. 12. the natural, v. 120. ix, 192. xi. 133.
- Moses, see Aaron.
- Muciber, a fallen angel, i. 740.
- Night in heaven, described, v. 642. and day, vi. 4. the natural night, iv. 604 776. v. 38. ix. 48. x. 846.
- Nimrod, the first monarch, his tyranny, &c. xii. 24.
- Nisroch, a fallen angel, vi. 446.
- Noah. his censure of the Antediluvian world, xi. 719 808. builds the ark, xi. 728.
- Noon described, v. 300.
- Obedience, conjugal, the happiness of woman, iv. 635. of will only acceptable to God, v. 529.
- Old age described, xi. 535.
- Omens of Adam's expulsion, xi. 182.
- Opinion, see knowledge.
- Orus and Osiris, fallen angels, i. 478.
- Pandemonium described, i. 710.
- Paradise, description of, iv, 131 214. v. 291. vii. 537. viii. 304. ix, 439. seat of it destroyed by the flood, xi. 829.

## INDEX.

- Patriarchal government, from the deluge to the time of Nimrod, xii. 13.
- Patriarchs, their story, xii. 113.
- Peace, its corruptions equal to the ravages of war, xi. 783.
- Peor or Chemos, a fallen angel, i. 412.
- Persecution, spiritual, its origin, xi. from 508 to 533. its effects, xii. 583.
- Plagues of Egypt, xii. 137.
- Planets, their aspects, &c. an effect of the fall, x. 656.
- Pleasure, carnal, censured, xi. 603.
- Prayer, efficacy of its spirit, xi. 5 14 146.
- Predestination, what, iii. 111.
- Priests cause the first dissention amongst the Jews, xii. 359.
- Rainbow, its first appearance and sign, xi. 865 895.
- Raphael, the archangel described, v. 276, his prowess, speeches, &c. see various parts of v. vi. vii. and viii.
- Reason the chief faculty of the soul, v. 100.
- Redemption of man, proposed by the Father and undertaken by the Son, iii. 227.
- Repentance, its efficacy, xi. 22.
- Reprobation, state of it. iii. 198.
- Rimmon, a fallen angel, i. 476.
- Sabbath, its institution and solemnity, vii. 581 594.
- Salvation, its extent, xii. 449.
- Satan, his fall from Heaven, i. 34. his stature, looks, &c. i. 193 284 292. his speeches, i. 84 242 315, ii. 11. iii. 681. 968. iv. 358. v. 673 772. vi. 418 608. ix. 532. x. 459.
- Saturn, a fallen angel, i. 512.
- Scriptures, how to be understood, xii. 511.
- Serpent described, ix. 182.
- Similies. (These are so numerous as to form an index of themselves, and therefore incompatible with our limits.)
- Sin described, ii. 650. her birth, ii. 752. speeches, x. 235 354 591.
- Sin, original, the first effect of it, ix. 1011.
- Slavery, its origin, xii. 86.
- Soul, its faculties, v. 100. its immortality discussed, x. 782.
- Spirits, their invisible existence on earth, iv. 677. their existence in life, intellect, &c. vi. 344.

## INDEX.

- Spring would have been perpetual within the tropics but for Adams's fall, x. 678.
- Stars, their places, appearance, &c. iii. 565. their influence, iv. 661.
- Storms, an effect of the fall, xi. 695.
- Sun, its appearance, power. &c. iii. 571. its annual course, &c. an effect of the fall, x. 651.
- Teachers, false, of religion, described, xii. 508.
- Temperance, its effect, xi. 50.
- Thammuz, or Adonis, a fallen angel, i. 446.
- Thunder, an effect of the fall, x. 666.
- Time defined, respecting eternity, v. 580.
- Titan a fallen angel, i. 510.
- Tradition censured, xii. 511.
- Tree of life described, ix. 218. ix. 69.
- Tree of knowledge, iv. 220. ix. 575.
- Truth, suffering for it. &c. xii. 569.
- Tyranny, its origin, xii. 86.
- Tyrants, their plea for conquest compared with Satan's first attempt on man, iv. 390.
- Twilight described, iv. 598.
- Vacuity, idea of, refuted by God's omnipresence, vii. 168.
- Valour, the common notion of it reprehended, xi. 688.
- Virtue degenerates in slavery, xi. 797.
- Uriel, his adventures, iii. 622 694 724. vi. 363.
- Uzziel, guardian of Paradise, iv. 782.
- War, its common origin, xii. 638 788.
- Waters, their separation from the earth, vi. 282.
- Wife, her duty on trying occasions, ix. 267 290.
- Wind, tempestuous, an effect of the fall, x. 664.
- Wisdom, the sum of it, xii. 573.
- Wolves, or false teachers, defined, xii. 507.
- Woman, her loveliest qualities, ix. 232. advantage of her social over her artificial accomplishments, xi. 614. in every respect the cause of man's misery, xi. 632.
- Works, with faith in Christ, eternal life, xii. 420.
- World, by whom possessed, iii. 444 463. described, viii. 218. its situation respecting heaven and hell, x. 320.
- Zephon, a guardian of Paradise, iv. 788 823 834.
- Zophiel, a cherub, vi. 535 537.









71.2009.084.00688

